

Dynamics for Disaster

David #213

Series 631 #213

2Sam 10:1

- I. 11th century and David's prosperity 998-960 BC
 - A. 200 years before David around 1004 BC things happened:
 1. Hitites were destroyed because of the sea peoples from Europe.
 - i. They crosses the Hellespont and taken troy, tne Bogas Qui, and marched on as Phrygians, Lykians, Myceans, etc.
 - ii. They moved into Anatolia but did not cross into syria.
 - iii. As they moved around they went down through Palestine to Egypt and Rhamses III stopped them and the remnant pulled back to the area around Gaza and became the Philistines.
 - iv. These were the ones who conquered much of southern Europe.
 2. Hitites became many small states
 3. Semitic Nomads called Aramains related to Jews through Abraham's brother Nahor who had a son Aram the source
 - i. They began to take over Syria and conquered much of it.
 - ii. They had neighbors in the Hitites and Phonecians (Combination of Caananites and the Sea Peoples).
 - iii. The phonecians learned all their sailing information from the Greek Sea Peoples.
 4. This resulted in a sudden strange interlude after David stopped the Philistines and Edomites and Moabites
 5. Understanding that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls history and stopped the growth the great empires who suddenly became quiet
 - i. It would be about 100 years before Assyria would become the Neoassyrian empire of Tiglath Poleser and Senacherib and Nebecannezar
 - ii. All the great activities which occurred in David's time and Solomon's time was due to the control of Human History by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ who made this possible in the strange interlude in Human History
 - iii. The Phrygians conquered Anatolian high plateaus but did not break into the area of the Jews.
 - iv. Hurrians, the Hitites, the Assyrians, Aramains all became quiet.
 - v. The Jews made peace with the Phonetician s and it was the phonetician who gave us the ability to speak phonetically and developed a better system of writing.
 - vi. They developed the anti-asian policy keeping the persians out of Europe and a pro european concept which allowed the rise of the great period of enlightenment in Athens
 - vii. This was caused by the development of Letters of Alphabet and a treaty with David and Solomon and took this alphabet all over the world in their blessing by association with David.
 6. Now we will see a great crisis
 - i. The crisis is the Aramains conquered all the great lands north of Israel.
 - ii. At this time David has spiritual prosperity 2Sam 7, and Professional Prosperity 2Sam 8 and Ps 60,
 - iii. He is blessing by association to Mephibosheth and Hiram king of Phoneticians who makes a treaty with David and Solomon. 2Sam 9
- II. Crisis - Disaster Dynamics, War and a Client Nation
 - A. V1-7 Client Nation in Peace
 - B. v8-19 Client Nation in War
 - C. At this time of peace the king is David and a Ultra Super Grace Believer and God has prospered him in many many ways.
 1. Wealth, success, king, military success, social and sexual prosperity, Promotion from God directly

2. All this came to David from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
- D. David's Friend the King of Ammon, Nahash, died
1. These people were always degenerate but very tough.
- E. Principles:
1. Even in times of prosperity things never remain the same in this life.
 - i. We change life changes we change spiritually each day.
 - ii. Prosperity cannot be perpetuated by human ingenuity but only through the concept that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls /hhj
 - iii. WE are never the same we are either worse or better or today depending on whether we have doctrine today or not and whether we use it or not.
 - iv. You cannot ever afford to neglect doctrine ever in our life.
 - v. Things never stand still either they are better or worse.
 - vi. This is important in social, sexual, spiritual, business etc life.
 - vii. This is especially true in thought life where we must have something to think with and that something must be Bible Doctrine
 - viii. Once the barbarous peoples of the area of Europe were given words to associate sounds with things and with things written they advanced and become great peoples.
 - ix. The day you stop thinking is the day you begin to retrogress.
 - x. Our educational system was the best but was being used to sell drugs to children and young adults and drugs destroy the mechanics of thinking by destroying brain cells.
 - xi. Doctrine will bring capacity for life and interests in life and will bring to you ideas from reading books and concepts developing new ideas.
 2. Life therefore is a set of changing circumstances but the Mature believer is adjusted to all changes because he has the capacity for thought
 - i. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul gives capacity for thinking which means enthusiasm for many subjects
 - ii. The greater the enthusiasm the greater the capacity for thought.
 - iii. We are loosing our scientific development because science is trying because of big government to relate everything to Peace.
 - iv. We should burn all our gasoline so that science will be motivated to develop other sources of energy.
 - v. We have been a great and prosperous nation but are starting to go backward in many things.
 - vi. We are trying to preserve nature in the concept of the Noble Savage of Rousseau's idiocy.
 - vii. We as believers must go forward in order that our nation may advance as well.
 3. Part of the prosperity imputed from the Justice of God includes the ability to recognize and analyze and orient to change.
 - i. This is often called survival.
 - ii. You must recognize change, then analyze the change and then finally Adjust to the change.
 4. What is true of the individual believer is also true of the Client nation to God.
 - i. This is a nation where the Laws of Divine Establishment operate to a maximum bringing maximum freedom to the citizens.
 - ii. Freedom is needed in the client nation for evangelism and then after salvation for the presentation of Bible Doctrine
 - iii. The client nation must involve itself in missionary activity and to provide a haven to the Jews.
 - iv. We lose track of the fact that the prosperity and blessing as individuals and

logistical support we have is all because of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

- v. We never will have a blessing or freedom without the ultimate source of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
5. The good old days of the past become pleasant memories to be replaced by new challenges of the present
 - i. Sometimes we become so occupied with the good old days that we ignore the challenges of the present and future and become disoriented to life.
 - ii. The good old days of the past are wonderful as long as they are not essentials.
 - iii. This fun and pleasure of the past will never carry us in future catastrophe.
 - iv. The only thing which can handles the disasters facing us in our life and our nation is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - v. Our Priority #1 must be Bible Doctrine above all else and if there is time after Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine then we can have fun.
 - vi. Many people forget the doctrine and continue their laughing and playing ignoring to the change and thus become destroyed by change.
 - vii. The good old days must never keep us from orienting to the changes of life today.
 - viii. We must recognize that we have waiting for us it the future something better than all the good old days once eternity begins and it will be perpetuated forever.
 - ix. God has left us here to think and As a man thinks so he is.
6. For the mature believer happiness does not depend on circumstances but on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - i. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is far greater than any circumstance in life.
 - ii. Doctrine the the ability to think Divine Viewpoint is far greater than circumstances good or bad.
7. Doctrine is learned through concentration on bible teaching and is applied through the same concentration under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit
 - i. We learn doctrine from the Pastor Teacher who studies the written word and teaches it to us.
 - ii. This requires concentration on the teaching by the Group, 2 or 3 gathered in our name.
 - iii. All things of distraction must be eliminated in order to promote concentration in the classroom of the Local Church which is isolation from the world to concentrate.
 - iv. In time of disaster and catastrophe we need this same concentration on the Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to meet and handle disaster.
 - v. Courage vs Cowardice is Thinking vs not thinking under pressure.
 - vi. You may be or have been a coward but by concentrating on Bible Doctrine may become courageous.
 - vii. All this depends on attitude to Bible Doctrine
- F. This was a time of prosperity in Israel and the world in general but things never stand still in life:
 1. There will develop a great catastrophe for Israel.
 2. The king of Ammon fought against Saul and did not like him
 3. When David became king this king had protected David against Saul and love him dearly.
 4. There was not enmity between these 2 kings and these 2 countries.
 5. The Ammonites lived just across the Jordan.
 6. David's military prosperity is what brought respect for the priest nation of God and some even were converted.
 7. These Ammonites were very tough and very unstable being descended from the daughter

- of Lot.
8. The slaughtered the giants and drove them out and took over the land.
 9. Deut 23:3-4 the Jews were forbidden to attack the Ammonites who were their cousins
 10. They were always antagonistic to Jews and joined the Moabites and others to try to destroy the Jews.
- G. Thus this period was a great exception in their history.
1. The Hittites came into the land and were about to wipe out Ammon but Joshua defeated the Ammonites and the Ammonites were able to conquer and defeat the Hittites the greatest empire in the world at that time.
 2. When a people have arrogance and jealousy and you try to help them they react in arrogance in jealousy and hate you for it and will try to destroy you.
 - i. More poor people are arrogant than ever you will see in the rich.
 - ii. We have aroused the jealousy and hatred and antagonism and are inspired to revolution by socialism.
 - iii. This is the total depravity of Man.
 3. This one magnificent king was a believer and loved David and restrained his people from fighting the Jews.
 - i. When he dies then this will end and the Ammonites would again antagonize the Jews.
 4. The Ammonites and Moabites both came from the incest of Lot with his 2 daughters who got him drunk to fornicate with him.
 5. The record of treachery and cruelty of the Ammonites toward the Jew emphasizes the lesson that being kind to other nations and helping them does not prevent such a jealous nation from turning on you and seeking to destroy you.
 6. Always watch historical events when some great ruler dies or is deposed there always overtures to the United States but in the future those who are supposed to be friends will use any opportunity to exploit us then destroy us.
 7. The United States of America the client nation to God is the most hated and despised nation in the world today.
- H. No matter how great a king like Nachash or how insignificant every person must die alone.
1. How you die depends on how you live thus capacity for life reflects in your capacity for dying.

2Sam 10:1-

v1: Now it came to pass after this period of the greatest prosperity, That the king of the citizens of Ammon died, and Hanun his son reigned in his stead.

David #214

Series 631 #214

2Sam 10:2-

- I. No matter the level of power or success in life a person must do his own dying just as he does his own living.
 - A. Every person in the world has no advantage over anyone else when it comes to dying
 - B. Every person in the world has no advantage over anyone else in living without Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the only advantage.
 - C. Each will have a time to die and we all have a chance to live and the only difference in living and dying is Bible Doctrine
 - D. Nachash was the greatest king in the nation of Ammon
 1. He died probably as a believer maybe even a mature believer.
 2. Many people mourned his death and many were compassionate but he died by himself.
 - E. Hanun his son was the crown prince but was very evil, hypocritical, arrogant person.
 1. He was respected and loved but only because of his father.
 2. Somewhere along the line of his life people flattered him in order to get more power when he took over the government.

3. Hanun did not need council nor accept council and ran the country all by itself and this irritated these men greatly.
 4. These men were only really interested in their own advancement and their own position.
- F. To the extent that any person or believer is susceptible to flattery he is a weak person and has a blind side where people are concerned.
1. Somewhere when we lose objectivity and became quite impressed with all that other people said about us we become weak.
 2. There are many people today who are very weak because they are susceptible to flattery.
 3. Much of American life is the ability to flatter in politics, business, spiritual life, athletics, Military life, professional life.
 4. Because flattery has become so great and become accepted and because so many have gained so much through flattery we have become a nation of very weak people.
 5. Today the predominating thinking of the Human Race is in terms of marxist socialism and the welfare state is everywhere.
 6. Because of this thinking evil and sloppy we have as a client nation to God have destroyed our own freedoms.
- G. The more people are divorced from reality, the more they dream, the more they have in arrogance and have in arrogance an image of self importance, the greater their megalomania the less ability they have to assume and handle authority.
- H. Hanun was a disaster from the point of his coming to the throne and would cause Ammon to take 100 years to recover.
1. He was weak and arrogant and unable to assume authority and the authority destroys them as they destroy everyone under them.
 2. People prone to arrogance and Self Righteousness always abuse authority and those under them.
 3. Hanun was unteachable and resisted authority of others who had a right to make a statement
 4. Those who reject authority cannot ever use authority
 5. Strict discipline in childhood builds respect for authority
- I. Principles:
1. Nations constantly change leadership and every change means a change of policy and the rapidity of leadership change means instability in the nation.
 - i. Stable nations will be unstable tomorrow and take others down with them
 2. Friendly nation today will be an enemy tomorrow
 3. A nation cannot ever depend on other nations for freedom and survival
 4. Nation which must depend on another nation for freedom and survival from an outside source has already destroyed itself.
 5. God designed each national entity to depend on itself for survival and freedom and therefore maintain the freedom within it because it does not depend on dictation from other powers
 6. Every nation depends on 2 factors for its independence, integrity and prosperity
 - i. Function of freedom establishment without hindrance from equality propaganda or dictates of other nations
 - a. There is no such thing as equality and freedom and equality cannot coexist
 - ii. Development of a pivot of mature believer can offset other failures but it requires evangelism and very strong Positive Volition after evangelism
 7. Even the greatest of people die, death is no respecter of greatness and it is no substitute for happiness and is no guarantee against death and the hereafter.
 8. The greatest person who ever lived can only be prepared for death and eternity by means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone and then persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine and becoming a mature believer.

- J. Courtesy must never be construed as weakness or cowardice.
 - 1. Weakness is being susceptible to flattery
 - 2. Weakness is arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - 3. Courtesy is neither arrogance nor weakness nor cowardice.
 - 4. This is the mistake of the weak.

II. V2:

- A. Death of one king means a new policy a new attitude and a new phase in history.
 - 1. His application was kindness, courtesy, respect, and love are always the best effort.
- B. Cal imperf 'asah' = to manufacture something from something.
 - 1. David is extending gracious courtesy toward the son of his friend
 - 2. The father understood grace and courtesy the son did not
 - 3. The Son King Hanun will regard David's gracious courtesy as weakness and cowardice
 - 4. This is the greatest mistake people can make
 - 5. The weak cannot ever understand the strong and the bully and coward cannot ever understand true courage.
 - 6. This will lead to a war which will destroy the ammonite nation, change their way of life and require over 100 years to recover.
 - 7. The people of this land were Warrior people and they were physically tough having to rely on physical ability for their strength
 - 8. These types of tough people must be well led and there is great arrogance in the Ammonite land and the king and the state department and many others are very arrogant.
 - 9. Arrogance neutralizes ability, talent and toughness.
 - 10. The weak cannot ever appreciate nor understand the strong.
- C. There are 2 great peoples which are simultaneously rising up as strong nations:
 - 1. Aramaians and the Jews
 - 2. Weak nations cannot ever understand a strong nation
 - 3. The weak nation cannot appreciate the honorable motivation of a strong nation
 - 4. The weak nation seeks to take advantage of the stronger nation.
 - 5. Superficial people tend to be superficial in their estimate of others and thus downgrade them in arrogance.
 - 6. Superficial people in their thinking obviously downgrade people who do not seem to be strong or powerful by their physical attributes and thus make a great mistake.
- D. During the fugitive years of David Nachash who offered sanctuary for his whole family while Saul was pursuing him
 - 1. He took care of him and his whole family while he was fleeing from Saul.
 - 2. This is the greatness of David he never forgets a kindness
 - 3. He was a greatly humble man, despite all his successes.
 - 4. One sign of humility is the ability to appreciate all that other people do for you regardless of how far you have advanced in life.
 - 5. David was not turned by his success or power.
 - 6. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul causes one to maintain the equilibrium of humility.
 - 7. Nachash was a smart man recognizing the genius of David as a military man and was flexible abandoning his tradition of enmity with Jews and made friends with David and was greatly blessed as a result
 - 8. The peace between Israel and Ammon was based on a very smart man who has just died and he advanced his nation and people by the treaty with Israel.
 - 9. Hanun was an arrogant fool and did not understand the military ability of David, his great prosperity from God and the concept of the client nation to God.
 - 10. He assumed David sending an ambassador was a sign of weakness
 - 11. As a mature believer with honor and integrity David sought to extend courtesy and kindness to the son offering the extended courtesy of peace.

12. The greatest blunder of Hanun was to reject his
 13. Arrogant people have no right nor ability to rule and we have the most arrogant people ruling in our nation.
- E. Hanun will suddenly discover that David is one of the most powerful people in the middle east with the King of the Aramain or syrian nations being the other.
1. Hanun's arrogance destroyed any possibility of using his brilliant mind properly.
 2. David will go to war with him until he is destroyed.
- F. Principles:
1. Arrogance destroys the effectiveness of a brilliant mentality
 2. Arrogance destroys talent and ability
 3. Arrogance destroys greatness of mentality, ability and strength
 4. Arrogance makes a smart person dumb and a stupid person petty.
- G. These are ambassadors of high rank in Israel and not slaves
1. David misses the son's father the dead king and assumes that the son has the same attitude
 2. This was a mistake on David's part.
 3. David assumed that being outside the family loving Nachash very much could only mean that the Son would love him more.
 4. This was a mistake of David regarding Hanun.
 5. These ambassadors were to convey congratulations on Hanun becoming new King and they were mature believers with personal charm and graciousness and understanding of Bible Doctrine and thus be able to make the new king understand David's sincerity.
- H. Principle:
1. This grace act is misconstrued as weakness and only arrogance could make this mistake
 2. The arrogance and impulsiveness of the new king will precipitate a war
 3. Arrogance is a source of great misery to the one who possesses it and even a greater one to those closely associated with it.
 - i. It is the number one enemy of the Christian along with self righteousness
 - ii. Self righteousness is arrogance and all self righteous Christians are as arrogant as Satan himself.
 4. As a result of the arrogance of Hunan his whole nation will suffer.
 5. Thus we see that the new king is evil
 - i. The greatness of one person is not usually reflected in his family with few exceptions.
 6. Neither arrogance nor Evil can understand good pure motivation nor gracious functions
 7. Therefore evil plus arrogance assumes honorable motives of others are dishonorable motives like those of the arrogant.
 8. Hanun assumed that the ambassadors were sent to spy out the fortifications of the Ammonites for this is what he would do for future military campaigns.
 9. When grace and evil come into contact there is always conflict
 - i. Conflict of thought and action and most often for the evil side disaster.
- I. Concept:
1. It become obvious that the new king is not impressed with courtesy and thoughtfulness in others.
 - i. This is arrogance and self centeredness
 2. The alternative to the peace overture of David will be war against the client nation to God which is reaching its peak and thus David will never lose a war.
 3. A strong military establishment and a pivot of mature believers is the only protection against the treachery of other nations.
 4. There are some people who can only be impressed with force or violence
 5. These people are criminals in their thinking if not in their action in principle as well as practice.
 6. There are some nations which can on ly be deterred by force as criminals can often only

- be deterred by force of the police.
7. Only warfare will restrain such a nation from conspiring to destroy other nations and only victory in battle and war will restrain these other nations.
- J. David's motivation was pure, honorable and consistent with his spiritual maturity and function under the honor code
1. The integrity of David is manifest by his aggressiveness in the function of grace.
 - i. He sent civilians as ambassadors and not G2 intelligence officers.
 - ii. David did the honorable thing.
 2. Note that the military type is always a love of peace and friendship because he understands the horrors of war where innocent and guilty both suffer from this organized violence.
 - i. War is violence and violence always means the innocent and guilty suffer
 3. The smart professional soldier is always prepared for war but avoids it with every possibility as long as possible.
 4. Arrogance causes implacability and this rejects friendship and peace.
 - i. 1970's the Russians were implacable toward us and we should never have made any treaty with them
 - ii. Today the Arabic Muslims are in the same if not worse category.
 - iii. Negotiation with these types of people is useless and meaningless
 - iv. Negotiation without beating them is meaningless.
 5. These ambassadors represent a powerful Jewish nation and should have been met with courtesy and dignity
 6. Arrogance is rash and maltreatment follows their message of comfort and congratulations.
 7. The national worship of Ammon is Molack combining phallic activity with child sacrifice and is centered in Satan and involves demonism.
 8. The greatest most honorable motivations and most gracious acts are misunderstood and believers cannot reason with demons nor national rulers under demonism.
 - i. This is why we had to go to war against Germany and Hitler was demon possessed and a socialistic communist.
 - ii. It was a terrible mistake to help the Russians but we needed to destroy the Germans under a demon possessed leader.
 - iii. The death of Nachash causes a revival of the worship of Molack
 - iv. Nazis are evil people and Neo Nazis are evil as well and the people who followed him were also.
- K. The perverted arrogance of the princes of Ammon:
1. The councilors of the new king came up with 2 questions for the king:
- L. Principles:
1. The new king has no poise and called a assembly of his chief advisors or ministers of state to discover the significance of the gracious act of David
 - i. The unbeliever cannot understand grace
 - ii. neither does the believer with Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine
 - iii. Only the one with a frame of reference for grace can understand it and only the believer learning doctrine has a frame of reference for grace.
 2. Petty people cannot ever understand the honorable motivation of great people because they are blinded by their own arrogance.
 3. Jealousy and pettiness always live together
 - i. A Jealous person is petty and the ministers of Ammon are Jealous of David therefore any counsel will be filled with pettiness and implacability
 4. Therefore the ministers of Ammon impugn David's motivation and begin maligning him.
 - i. Their judgment of David reveals their own thinking
 - ii. Never judge people by the way you think, It may be mixed up.

- iii. You cannot evaluate others on the basis of how you think but only on the higher principles of the word of God.
- 5. The jealous princes are arrogant and guilty of inordinate ambition wanting to conquer David and all of Israel.
- 6. These princes are most anxious to send their ambassadors to Jerusalem for reconnaissance of Jerusalem for their planned attack on Israel.
- 7. By judging others we reveal our own thinking and motivation
 - i. Judge not lest you reveal your own motivations.
- 8. Arrogance and jealousy initiates a conspiracy against David and the Jews.
- 9. The arrogant princes describe to David their antagonism and motivation to destroy Israel and they advertise by what they did.
- 10. There the ministers acting as counselors to Hanun the new king begin by introducing doubt into the king.
 - i. All the counseling is not written down but the summary only.

2Sam 10:2-

v2: Therefore or consequently as a result of hearing about the Ammonite kings death David said, "I will manufacture grace from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in my Stream of Consciousness of the Soul giving courtesy, respect, thoughtfulness and kindness toward Hanun the son of Nachash, as his father manufactured grace to me when Saul was pursuing me." So David sent forth to comfort him concerning his father by the hand of or through his ambassadors. And David's ambassadors came to the land of the people of Ammon.

David #215

Series 631 #215

2Sam 10:3-

I. Principles:

- A. Courtesy is often misjudged as weakness
- B. Weak people cannot ever understand nor appreciate strength.
- C. Both kings were believers and honorable and men of spiritual stature they helped each other during the years they knew each other.
 - 1. He had capacity to appreciate the greatness of other people without trying to compete with them or put them down
 - 2. This is what made Nachash a great king and great man and recognized the greatness of David without arrogance or jealousy.
- D. It is difficult for people who are truly great to have true friends and people who associate with them have ulterior motives in their association.
- E. It is possible to go from spiritual infancy almost to maturity and never become spiritually mature because of inability to shed our arrogance.
 - 1. If you approach maturity and all the tests to show yourself true helpless and you have not shed your arrogance you will never make it to Spiritual Maturity.
 - 2. No arrogant person ever becomes a mature believer.
 - 3. A person in arrogance almost always overestimates their importance and does not realize the source of all blessing.
 - 4. This results in a loss in relationship with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and with people.
- F. Nachash was free from arrogance and thus reached his capabilities and his capacities.
 - 1. No one can have capacity for life and love and blessing and maintain arrogance.
 - 2. There is no way that any human capacity or ability to handle disaster and it takes the grace provision of God from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the capacity from this doctrine to handle disaster
 - 3. It is the reverse concentration from Metabolized Bible Doctrine that allows us to handle adversity in the form or great disaster.
- G. Hanun was a man who had a great personality and admired by his contemporaries with great potential
 - 1. Hanun could have been a great man but he competed with David instead of working with him.
 - 2. Arrogant people when given opportunity become jealous, implacable, and insufferable.

3. Arrogant people compete with others to assuage their own feelings of inferiority.
 4. He thought that a person who is courteous and thoughtful is weak and thus takes advantage of this situation.
 5. His greatest blunder was rejection of friendship with David
 6. Hanun's arrogance will destroy and possibility of further prosperity for the nation of Ammon.
 7. Hanun was very smart with high IQ but arrogance made him dumb as all arrogant people are.
 8. Arrogance divorces the person with it from reality and they always underestimate others and overestimate themselves.
 9. Arrogance is an acquired weakness not inherent and the worst weakness in life is an acquired weakness.
- H. The Ambassadors of David were of high rank and noblemen of Israel.
1. They when to Hanun to console him at the death of his father and offer congratulations to him for becoming king.
 2. The arrogance of Hanun will show itself in impulsiveness and ultimately in destroying him.
 3. The nation of Ammon will be cursed by association and their king is an arrogant fool and a weak man.
 4. He is divorced from reality and inflexible with regard to non essentials.
 5. He is evil and thus cannot understand pure motivation and gracious function
 6. Grace function on the part of David was the last hope for this man to perpetuate the Kingdom of Ammon.
 7. He needed to learn from David and be evangelized by him and learn doctrine from him to grow to Spiritual Maturity.
- I. Hanun does not know how to cope with grace.
1. Arrogant people never do understand gracious motivations and acts.
 2. The alternative to rejection of David's peace overtures is war with the client nation Israel.
 3. He will only be impressed by Force and will die.
 4. When you have to be impressed by force it is too late to be impressed by wisdom and this is the destruction of many a nation, organization or individual.
 5. Once you are impressed by the obvious force it is too late and you have lost out in life.
 - i. In jail, Dead, disfigured for life, destroyed mentally with neurosis etc.
 - ii. This is loss of all lessons of life.
 - iii. Some people only learn when they are totally outwitted and beaten by a greater force.
 6. We must learn humility from Bible Doctrine and must from doctrine learn to never overestimate ourselves
 7. We must learn from Bible Doctrine that we have in ourselves no force, ability, wisdom, greatness, attractiveness, success, authority nor power by which we can resolve the problems of life.
 8. The accumulated problems of life are too great for human ability
 9. When these problems result in a major historical crisis we then learn that human resources are absolutely of no help
 10. Human security systems cannot help us in adversity and there is not collective disaster where we can use money, gold, securities, insurance, friends power ability and resolve the problems.
 11. This is the disaster we face in the future of this nation and all these will be meaningless and the only hope will be Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul .
- J. Principle:
1. The integrity of David is manifest by his aggressiveness in the function of Grace.

- i. Grace can be active or passive
- ii. Passive grace and lets an insult go by
- iii. Active Grace reaches out and does the honorable thing.
2. Believers have difficulty in understanding when Grace is to be active or passive
 - i. Grace must be passive when we are tempted to malign, gossip, judge, seek vengeance, destroy or hurt another because we dislike them.
 - ii. Grace must be active as in the honor code and grace here is active in sending his ambassadors to Hanun.
3. The military professional understands the horror of war and here David as a professional soldier makes a specific aggressive overture for peace.
4. The smart professional soldier is always prepared for war but avoids war if possible if you can have peace with honor.
5. Arrogance causes implacability and this always rejects friendship in thinking that the overtrue to friendship is weakness.
6. These Jewish ambassadors represent a powerful nation and should be treated with courtesy and dignity
7. Arrogance is unstable and impetuous and rash and maltreatment follows the courtesy of Grace.
8. The nation of Ammon worships Molack including phallic cult and child sacrifice and demon possession and this last one is the greatest problem.
 - i. There has been a revival of Molack in Ammon and demonism will take over.
 - ii. You cannot reason with nor compromise with demons and when you have a demon nation you will have to fight that nation.
 - iii. This is why we must fight Nazi Germany and now why we must fight strongly the Muslims in the middle east and elsewhere.
 - iv. We cannot ever compromise with demonism and should have fought the Nazis and then the Russians
 - v. Nazis were the worst people in history the only ones close were the communists of Russia.
 - vi. Nazis in Germany was a cancer where it must be destroyed and in any place where it is found even today.

II. V3: The perverted arrogance of the princes of Ammon – What is wrong with the state department.

- A. There is only part of the counsel of the ministers of Ammon with Hanun and only 2 questions recorded here.
- B. Principles:
 1. The grace act caused hanun to lose his poise and call assembly of his chief advisors to see if anyone could understand what David was up to with his sending of ambassadors
 2. Petty people never understand honorable motivation or actions and they are always blinded by their arrogance.
 - i. Pettiness is a byproduct and direct result of possession of arrogance in the soul.
 3. Jealousy and pettiness always live together and rarely mated.
 - i. Jealous persons are Petty and vice versa.
 - ii. Ministers of Ammon were jealous of David since the reign of the old king and the treaty he made with Israel since they were unnecessary in time of peace.
 4. The state department of Ammon impugn David's motivation and they begin by maligning him and this reflects their own thinking
 - i. They judge and malign him and thus reveal their own thinking.
 5. The jealous princes are arrogant and guilty of inordinate ambition
 - i. They want to be advisors to the king and the way to do this they think is to judge David, criticize and malign him so that suspicion will come to the weak young king.
 - ii. They did not see the consequences of their bad advice and it did not occur to them

- that David would simply cross the border and totally destroy them/.
- iii. They have seen David and his genius in the military in many campaigns but their arrogance blinds them to the implications of rejecting his offer of friendship.
6. Arrogant people are always selfish and never think much beyond their own nose
 - i. They want power as advisors and will advise suicidal courses just to have power to give the advice.
 - ii. This is our government today in all aspects.
 7. The jealous princes were arrogant and guilty of inordinate ambition
 8. These men were ministers of state and anxious to send ambassadors to Jerusalem to recon the city and discover how to defeat the Jewish army.
 9. By judging others you reveal your own thinking and motivations.
 - i. Judging impugns the motives of others but also reveals the thinking of the one judging.
 10. Arrogance and jealousy initiates a conspiracy against David and the Jews.
 11. The arrogant princes ascribe to David their antagonism and motivation to destroy Israel.
 - i. Thus the ministers to Hanun begin by introducing doubt to the thinking of the new king.
- C. Counseling can be a vicious thing.
1. Pastor Teacher have the duty to teach doctrine in a classroom situation.
 2. Counseling always destroys privacy when seeking it.
 - i. You must always reveal the private things of your own soul and thus destroyed your privacy and freedom and the opportunity of living your life as unto the Lord.
 - ii. This is a great loss which cannot ever be regained
 3. When you go for counseling you lose objectivity
 - i. It is essential for Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine
 - ii. This is why the ministry of God the Holy Spirit is important because often we are naturally subjective because we are naturally arrogant and thus impossible for us to be objective when a message hits us personally.
 4. Counseling indicated weakness and you would never go for counseling if you had the courage and strength to make a decision and stick with it.
 - i. When you go for counseling you are using another as a crutch and thus destroy freedom and the ability to live life as unto the Lord.
 - ii. To the extent that you seek advice you show weakness or incompetence or both.
 - iii. Incompetence is because of lack of learning how to handle personal or professional pressures.
 - iv. Weakness is the result of arrogance preventing us from recognizing that we are all helpless and will face impossible situations and the only help is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - v. Seeking counseling is weakness is arrogance in the form of Self Centeredness.
 - vi. A pastor may teach a doctrine many times and it is ignored or rejected because the person hearing it is resisting the doctrine from self centered arrogance and thus goes and demands the pastor teach him personally.
 - vii. Arrogant people always make an issue of themselves and counseling is demanding an instant solution to a problem.
 - viii. Refusal to accept doctrines is making an issue of self in many ways.
 5. Our whole education is developed on a system of liberal and socialism
 - i. Liberalism which says man is important and the most important thing in life.
 - ii. Socialism says you are important and because of that you should not have to work for a living and the state will provide a living for you.
 - iii. Communism says you are very important as a deceit and in their system they exploit arrogance and will turn us back to animals.

- iv. Communism has exploited American arrogance from Franklin Roosevelt to present day.
- D. The question of the ministers is a two fold display of arrogance:
 - 1. They impugn the motivation of David maligning him.
 - 2. In maligning David they impugn and malign their own king saying he is not smart enough to see the motivation of David.
- E. The most dangerous thing to do is to be an amateur counselor.
 - 1. Persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine is the counseling we need.
 - 2. We may fail but that is how we learn from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - 3. WE are not here after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to live life as unto some counselor but as unto the Lord.
 - 4. NEVER even emulate any pastor but get our emulation from Bible Doctrine.
 - 5. From doctrine comes strength and if we pass the last test to Spiritual Maturity then arrogance will be gone.

David #216 Series 631 #216 2Sam 10:3-

- I. Historical Background
 - A. At this time for 300 years 3 great empires had dominated the middle east, Hitites, Syrians (Aramains), Assyrians
 - 1. In addition there were many others including Egyptians, Philistines, Phrygians, Phoenicians, etc
 - B. David stopped the Philistines, the Phrygians stayed in the area of Anatolia or Turkey, Phoenicians were friendly to David.
 - 1. David's historical setting demonstrated clearly that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls history.
 - C. In the United States of America today (1970's) we are losing every vestige of the Laws of Divine Establishment in our society
 - 1. We will have anarchy in the United States of America when the police and military fail in the nation unlike anything we can imagine.
 - 2. God always has a use for the believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and only the mature believer survives this type of disaster.
- II. The questions presented to Hanun by his ministers
 - A. Purpose of the ambassadors principle:
 - 1. The purpose of the ambassadors sent by David is to provide comfort at the loss of Hunan's father, to congratulate the New king on his ascendancy, and to provide the basis for perpetuation of the peace treaty between these 2 nations.
 - 2. It is to assure the young king that David has only good intentions for peace and consolidated prosperity in the middle east.
 - B. The young king is arrogant with a high IQ but is stupid because of his arrogance.
 - 1. These ministers see his stupidity and exploit it.
 - 2. Nachash cut off the ministers and never took their advice removing them from any semblance of power.
 - 3. Arrogance in the king and in the ministers will combine to provide poor motivation and then destruction of the nation.
 - 4. Arrogant people who have lost power and try to regain it are not interested in the people or nation which they serve they only want to regain power.
 - 5. The King wants to make some great decisions to gain the attention of the people showing he is holding the power.
 - 6. The ministers however have usurped this power from the king because of their flattery.

7. The ministers will gain control of the people but in reality nothing.
 8. People who seek to gain control of power in their own nation and seek rulership and power for the sake of assuaging their own arrogance come up with policies which destroy the nation.
 9. This is the status of the United States of America from 1970's till today.
 - i. No treaties should be made with any evil communist nation
 - ii. Treaties should have been only with South Africa and Rhodesia
 - iii. Our foreign policy is totally divorced from Morality and only related to expediency and shows cowardice and arrogance
- C. To take authority away from this King they are using the flattery method one of the best ways.
1. Robbing a person of authority by flattery is the most subtle and obviously evil way of overthrowing power.
 2. Thus power is transferred from the elected representative to those who advise him as in the United States of America in the 1970's with carter.
 3. Evil men use counseling to gain control of the nation.
- D. Principles:
1. There are 2 questions in this verse
 - i. The first is the original attitude of the king
 - ii. The second is the viewpoint of the ministers in seeking a coup de tat by counseling.
 - iii. There are more by counseling than by violence.
 - iv. This is occurring in the United States of America in the 1970's
 2. Example of this is Lot and Sodom and Ghorah
 - i. This is the worst thing which can happen to a man in power in any level it is Arrogance.
 - ii. Arrogance in power today leads to degeneracy in power tomorrow.
 - iii. Arrogance always attacks Law and Order and establishment organizations
 - iv. When this attack occurs and is coupled with degeneracy there is total disaster.
 - v. Lot cannot call police and offered to send out his 2 daughters to be raped.
 - vi. One daughter is the mother of Ammon and the other is the mother of the Moabites.
 3. WE in the United States of America are totally ruled by arrogance
 - i. Just to tolerate Homosexuals is unacceptable and is crime and degeneracy
 - ii. When homosexuals rule any organization the degeneracy is a cancer which will destroy the organization.
 - iii. To become homosexual you have to be degenerate and the degeneracy is totally destructive and demanding pseudo rights.
 - iv. When you give homosexuals rule the cancer of their degeneracy **MUST BE DESTROYED.**
- E. The ministers of the king are degenerate
1. Amonites were founded when LOT got drunk on the 2nd night and his youngest daughter had sex with him and her son called Ammon
 - i. The nation was founded on degeneracy, Incest
 - ii. The incestuous had fled from the degeneracy of homosexuality.
 - iii. Thus the nation was built on degeneracy
 2. They are now in the arrogant stage and arrogance always produces weak rulers who through arrogance are vulnerable to flattery and seek tolerance of the other degenerates.
 3. In the early 1900s the homosexual was considered the lowest form of society in existence.
 - i. They would beg to be jailed to be protected from those who wanted to destroy them
 4. Homosexuality is first a temptation and then a sin of degeneracy.

- i. First there is psychological acceptance of homosexuality then there is legal acceptance
 - ii. You cannot tolerate homosexuality and survive
 - iii. There can be lusty sins and prosperous but cannot be degenerate in sins and survive.
 5. The second viewpoint prevailed from the 2nd question and the degenerate counselors of the king will take control.
 - i. The king is kept out of the picture and flattered and will have nothing to say about the government.
 - ii. He is susceptible to bad advice because he is susceptible to flattery.
 - iii. Anyone susceptible to flattery is also susceptible to bad advice.
 - iv. Good administrative ability and leadership can be destroyed by being susceptible to flattery.
 - v. A leader or businessman etc can lose his ability by being susceptible to flattery.
 - vi. Susceptibility to flattery allows bad advice and erroneous viewpoint to take over in the soul.
 6. The first question in this verse shows objectivity while the second question is totally subjective.
 - i. This shows that the king was objective when the ambassadors first came
 - ii. He however became subjective at some point changing his viewpoint
 - iii. You cannot be in any form of leadership and do a good job and be arrogant
 - iv. Arrogance leads to susceptibility to flattery which brings subjectivity when objectivity is needed.
 - v. Flattery hits arrogance and causes subjectivity which destroys the ability of the leader.
 - vi. Thus here we see the degeneracy of the nation because of arrogance being fed by flattery.
 - vii. Nachash was a great leader and had capacity for all aspects of life and leadership in the nation.
 7. Every person who has authority must learn to rely on his own judgment or be able to discern good advice from bad and take it without an arrogance problem.
 - i. You must have capacity for the authority which you have
 - a. You thus set policy and see that it is carried out.
 - ii. You must be humble enough to see good advice and take it.
 - a. You always need to know the facts.
 - b. It does not matter from whom the advice comes
 - c. If you are humble you will accept the advice and take action based on it.
 - d. If you are arrogant you will reject the advice because of some thing you do not like about the one giving the advice.
 - e. Good advice comes from strange places and you must never allow arrogance to hinder taking good advice.
 - iii. Good advice is given totally by Bible Doctrine
 8. Arrogance is blind and always takes the bait of Jealous innuendo
 - i. David's relationship with Nachash will be destroyed by Hanun
- F. Principle:
1. Treaties between nations are no better than the integrity of the leadership of those nations.
 - i. When there is a change of leadership the treaties are meaningless.
 2. A peace treaty or alliance with a nation without integrity is no better than the paper on which it is written
 3. By giving credence to the suspicions voiced by his ministers Hanun has set the way for the downfall of his nation.
 4. Add to his arrogance Jealousy and implacability overflowing from his ministers.

5. Nice guys with suspicions can change overnight and will become monsters
6. Hanun was most likely a nice guy but now because of the ministers becomes suspicious.
7. Suspiciousness leads to implacability
8. Implacability means hostility, obvious or subtle, hidden or revealed.
9. King Hanun was trapped by his own arrogance.
 - i. He should have seen that the first question reproached him for taking the ambassadors at face value.
 - ii. His arrogance took the stand that he must prove himself to these ministers and be better than his father.
 - iii. He listened and arrogance accepted their suspicions and adopted their attitude
 - iv. He could have been objective and handled the problem but became subject and lost control.
 - v. ***Subjectivity in leadership results in loss of control.***
10. The young king did not want to lose the approbation of his ministers and thus did not approach the problem objectively
 - i. His arrogance made him agree with his advisors.
11. Arrogance produces the hangup of having to prove oneself
 - i. This is why all officers start as 2nd Lt's
 - ii. Instead of being teachable by company and battalion commanders and good NCOs they take the stand of not needing advice from anyone.
 - iii. Arrogance makes the person who possesses it very uncomfortable and painful having always to prove oneself.
 - iv. When you come into an organization all you have to do is learn not change things.
 - v. There are people who cannot take having authority at all and they become instant monsters and bullies
 - vi. This is arrogance with them trying to prove something
 - vii. Arrogance is one of the most destructive sins.
12. The king resorted to extreme measures to insult David and maltreat his ambassadors.
13. Since Rabbah the capitol city was one of the greatest fortifications of the time the ministers used this to insinuate that David's ambassadors were on a recon mission to scout the city and take it.
 - i. This was an evil innuendo but could have been true.
 - ii. Because something has the possibility of truth does not mean it is true.
 - iii. The proper thing to do is to sit back and watch and see if there is any truth in the situation.
 - iv. **Arrogance is impulsive while good leadership sits back and waits**
 - v. If you can wait long enough if it is possible those in conspiracy will often crucify themselves.
14. The result was a terrible injustice to Israel and such an injustice never stands alone but begins a chain of cause and effect leading to war, violence and destruction.
 - i. One injustice leads to others which intensifies leading to suffering to the organization.
 - ii. This can if in government lead to total destruction of the nation.
15. If arrogance and authority do not contradict in leadership the authority will be lost.
 - i. The level of authority you have will be inverse to the level of arrogance you have.
 - ii. The percentage of arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will destroy that percentage of authority you have.
16. Abusive insults and maltreatment of the Jewish ambassadors will result in war with the client nation Israel.
 - i. In the chain of responding to kindness a reaction is inserted from jealousy and arrogance implacability and the result will be devastating.
 - ii. Mental Attitude Sins break the chain of gracious response to gracious actions.

- iii. Jealousy plus arrogance is the most destructive combination of Mental Attitude Sins
 - iv. Jealousy of the ministers plus the arrogance of the king result in war and destruction.
17. Evil men measure someone else's foot by their own last.
- i. Therefore by impugning David's motives these ministers reveal their own arrogance, jealousy and implacability.
 - ii. Small petty men never understand great men.
 - iii. Hanun became inflexible in non essentials.
 - iv. Flexibility minus doctrine is weakness and plus doctrine is strength.
 - v. Strength through flexibility can only exist in the soul of the believer.

2Sam 10:3-

v3: Consequently the chief ministers or counselors of the people of Ammon offered counsel to Hanun their king, "From your type of thinking or from your viewpoint is David honoring your father, because David has sent on a mission comforters to you? Is it not for the purpose of making a reconnaissance to search for military purpose the city, both by scouting it and to overthrow it, that David sent his ambassadors to you?"

David #217

Series 631 #217

2Sam 10:4-

- I. The Maltreatment of the Ambassadors by Hanun
 - A. Principles:
 - 1. Unwarnted use of violence never solves any problems
 - 2. In fact resorting to violence against a helpless embassy may stimulate arrogance but eventually destroyed and humbled their insolent presumptuousness
 - 3. Many helpless nations have been destroyed by violence aggression of others.
 - i. When ever there is any form of rioting and violence and protesting should be ignored by the news media
 - ii. These people just want to see themselves on TV and this is EVIL.
 - iii. TV should recognize this and not show them.
 - iv. As long as no violence is involved they should be ignored
 - v. If violence is involved they should then be destroyed.
 - vi. The police officer is the last stand in our cities and in our nation as a whole.
 - vii. They are keeping us from total anarchy and mob violence but there will be a time when this will not occur.
 - viii. The only way police in any large city can handle mob violence is to have every possible weapon for backup including grenades, weapons including artillery.
 - ix. Law is no longer helping police officers but leaning over backwards to help the criminals.
 - x. The police officer is isolated from support from law and citizens both.
 - xi. He fights mob violence, liberalism on the streets, law and judges and every form of evil.
 - 4. The ambassadors were on a peaceful mission and there were no military escorts
 - 5. Arrogance misjudges the intentions of others assuming what is not there.
 - i. It is possible to become so suspicious in your mind that suspicion plus arrogance destroys discernment.
 - ii. Arrogance misjudges the intentions of others most of the time.
 - iii. *People involved in violence and mob action do not understand the implications of their actions.*
 - iv. Mobs whether just or unjust in their cause loses their cause in the violence they cause.
 - v. It is always a well organized oligarchy which controls the mob using them and then discarding them when they gain power.
 - vi. This occurred in France in the revolution and in russia in the revolution.

- vii. Those who enter into mobs today do not understand the evils of mobs and the lack of establishment
- viii. It is the professors of sociology and history which today encourage their students to strike for action.
- ix. In the 1970's the military has already been set aside as a social experiment and the only thing standing between the people and the mob is the police.
- x. Police must be trained in the use of machine guns and mortars and light tanks in order to offset mob actions.

B. Criminals and violence

- 1. Criminals use violence to pursue crime
 - i. He does not understand that violence eventuates in greater violence which will destroy him.
- 2. The king used violence against the ambassadors of David and it never occurred to him that using violence against these helpless men this would result in a greater violence that he could use would be used against him.
 - i. Those who use violence to steal and rape and murder will have violence used against it.
 - ii. This also refers to those who use violence to gain power in government such as communists.
- 3. This king used violence and started a system which would result in warfare.
- 4. ***Whenever you use violence there is always a possibility of greater violence being used against you.***
 - i. ***Once you start to use violence you start a system whereby violence is now able to be used against you.***
 - ii. ***When you create a system of violence eventually a greater system of violence will be used against you and destroy you.***
 - iii. ***This is true because there is always greater violence somewhere which will be used against you.***
 - iv. ***This is why the Laws of Divine Establishment exist to solve problems without violence and also encourage freedom with principles of:***
 - a. ***Privacy***
 - b. ***Property***
 - c. ***Freedom***
 - d. ***Authority***
 - v. ***You cannot have violence and continue to have freedom, privacy or property and authority.***
 - vi. ***One act of violence creates another act of violence which escalates to the point of instant anarchy without the presence of the Law Enforcement officers.***
- 5. This king used violence against ambassadors from David simply because the ministers accused without proof them of spying against his city.

C. Principles:

- 1. Establishment violence whether military or police function will eventually win against criminal violence and evil violence of evil persons or nations.
 - i. The violence which is started eventually destroy those starting it,
 - ii. Nazis and Japanese empire.
- 2. Whenever any group uses violence to gain their ends they will be destroyed.
 - i. Crusaders who use violence will be destroyed by their violence.
 - ii. Even having a right or correct objective will be destroyed by violence
- 3. All violence as a means of problem solving is arrogance
- 4. Arrogance sees violence as a tool while establishment sees reason and freedom as a tool.
 - i. We in the United States of America have in the past solved problems by reason but we have turned to violence to do this now.

5. The tool of reason will eventually overcome the tool of violence.
 - i. This is how England became ruled by parliament and the United States of America by its own government.
6. Violence is the result of the Old Sin Nature function in 3 areas:
 - i. Sinfulness
 - a. Jealousy, vindictiveness, implacability.
 - ii. Human Good
 - a. Liberalism and peace programs invite violence
 - b. Kindness and love are regarded as weakness to be exploited by violence
 - c. Any nation too long under liberalism invites violence as we do in the United States of America
 - iii. Evil
 - a. The violent take advantage of real or imagined weakness
 - b. They torture, rape, exploit, murder, steal, etc.
 - c. This is occurring in the 70s and more so today when media glorifies those involved in criminal activities and mob action.
7. David expressed grace and send mature believers to console this king and he maltreats them in violence
8. The end of violent aggression is stated by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Matt 26:32

Matt 26:32

v32: All those who draw out the sword from the sheath in violence or crime shall perish by the sword.

9. Violence is the tool of the arrogant, anti establishment, the destroyer of human freedom.
 10. Violence can only be restrained in the criminal mind by the threat or action of greater violence related to freedom establishment or justice.
 11. The impulsive act of violence and the insult to the ambassadors will result in a great war against Ammon defeating them and their allies.
- D. Shaving 1/2 the beard was the greatest insult in the ancient world
1. Then the king cut off half the robes above their waist and exposed half their upper bodies and all their lower bodies
 2. This was a great injustice
 3. Self centered people make poor rulers and cannot handle authority
 4. Self centered people are always guilty of poor judgment because their Frame of Reference lacks sensitivity toward others.
- E. Principle:
1. Combined insults which have occurred here in this case cannot be comprehended in modern history.
 - i. The last place this occurred was in the 1700s regarding Karim Khan sending ambassadors to a nation and this having occurred started war of extreme violence.
 2. Such irresponsible actions produce chains of events under the principle of cause and effect.
 - i. Never start a fight in a strange place
 - ii. Instead of winning you may end up in a hospital.
 3. Impugning David's motives led to arrogant manifestations of cowardice
 - i. These men had come to comfort the king of ammon
 4. Hanun was a weak man and influenced by evil counselors and had succumb to approbation lust and abused the ambassadors of a very powerful country.
 - i. Such arrogance resulted in war and destruction
 5. Irresponsibility of leadership leads to the destruction of the nation and of any organization.
 6. In the end the plodder will win if he keeps on moving forward.
 - i. The plodder is the one taking in doctrine day after day.
 7. Even at a game with organized violence if you leave the organization you lose control

F. Principle:

1. Weak leaders in the hands of unscrupulous men are tools of destruction of a prosperous nation.
2. Arrogant people underestimate others especially those with authority or power.
3. Therefore arrogance is a vicious sin and divorces one from the reality of life.
4. Arrogant nations are humbled by the nations which they insult
 - i. David defeated Hanon and also destroyed the most powerful nation in the middle east at the same time the Aramain confederation of Hadar Rizer
5. David's military prosperity as an imputation of divine blessing to the mature believer was unknown to the arrogant leaders of ammon
6. Such ignorance of doctrine was replaced by arrogance with no contact with reality
 - i. They had no idea that David as a mature believer under the blessing of God was such a powerful person.
 - ii. Those who attack a mature believer are cursed by antagonism
 - iii. Antagonism to the mature believer is inevitable disaster to the one who does it.
7. Although allied with Aramains and Syrians this combination was not enough to defeat Israel.
8. The inevitable principle: Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History
 - i. The combined military power of Ammon and Syria the Aramains was not enough for the power of God and blessing imputed to Spiritually Mature David.
 - ii. Aram was north of Israel
 - iii. They had defeated all the other nations in the middle east and it now was Israel against Ammon and Aram
 - iv. This human power is no match for the power of God
9. God permits historical trends to go to disaster
 - i. God permitted David to be caught in a strategic trap between Aram and Ammon to demonstrate his power and grace to the believer but also to punish those who live outside of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - ii. There if no freedom outside the Laws of Divine Establishment
 - iii. There must be freedom to accept or reject Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and Bible Doctrine
 - iv. You must be free to live and advance in the Spiritual Life as far as possible or go down into reversionism and the Sin Unto Death
 - v. Freedom makes it possible to fail or succeed in society
 - vi. EQUALITY of thinking and practice destroys the variations in society providing for control of one or a very few.
 - vii. Success is the motivation and function of freedom and this motivates others to follow
 - viii. Failure is the motivation for others to follow or avoid
 - ix. The principles of communist socialism destroys this.
10. Arrogance destroys the capacity for life to the same extent that Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul produces capacity for life.
11. Evil conspiracies of men never hinder the Plan of God any more than David and reversionism in the middle of a war.
12. **God's plan marches on and man's failure or success cannot hinder the Plan of God.**
 - i. When our president does evil things we must avoid involvement with any other evil thing especially violence.
13. ***When God disciplines a nation he withdraws from the nation good leaders and sensible rulers.***
14. ***When God disciplines a nation common sense disappears and degeneracy replaces it.***
15. ***The sign of coming disaster to a nation is the decline of great leadership to be replaced by arrogant and irresponsible rulers***

16. *National leadership is the mirror of a nations spiritual status quo.*

2Sam 10:4-

v4: **Therefore Hanun violently seized David's ambassadors, and shaved off half the beard of each, and cut off their garments and robes in the middle above their buttocks, and violently sent them away.**

David #218

Series 631 #218

2Sam 10:5-

- I. The wisdom of the Mature believer which comes from the ability to handle maximum authority with minimal arrogance
 - A. This gives you the ability to have the extra thoughts about those under you:
 1. Weaknesses
 2. How they feel
 3. Strengths
 4. Problems
 - B. The greatest strengths of a person are being thoughtful of those under your command.
 - C. Principles:
 1. Good leaders must be informed about all events in his organization good or bad.
 - i. You cannot make objective decisions nor formulate the correct policy for an organization unless you have all information good and bad.
 2. David has good subordinates seen because they tell him the truth rather than what he wants to hear.
 - i. When people tell you what you want to hear when you are in charge your leadership failed to that extent
 - ii. David had to have facts good or bad to know what really happen.
 3. Leaders in any area must have facts to make decisions and he cannot gather the facts himself.
 - i. No man can have authority and try to run around and spy on others at the same time.
 - ii. Spies are always subordinates and Leaders are never spies.
 - iii. Leaders must have reliable subordinates to receive accurate and correct information.
 4. Correct action is based on correct information when good leadership is involved and David is good leadership.
 5. David does the right thing because he has the correct information.
 - i. Good leaders are never deceived by his subordinates and thus can make correct decisions and initiate good action.
 6. No leader ever regards those under him as machines to do a job
 - i. He regards them as individuals with strengths and failures weaknesses and thus learns to know his personnel
 7. Good leadership's personal concern for subordinates is a courtesy which goes with authority.
 - i. This courtesy and thoughtfulness of subordinates goes with authority
 - ii. This is ignored by arrogant leaders who are never concerned about people under their command.
 - iii. Leadership must be thoughtful and considerate for those under his command.
 - iv. Indifference to the condition of the subordinates is distortion of authority and a sign of poor leadership.
 - v. Subordinates must never be degraded or embarrassed by leadership.
 - vi. Bracing or chewing out a subordinate is at times needed and if you don't do this then you must remove them.
 - vii. If you brace a subordinate then you are actually trying to save them
 - viii. If you remove them then they are not part of the organization.
 - ix. People who are totally unteachable and take advantage of courtesy and

- thoughtful
- x. These people are arrogant and stupid
- xi. These people think that a person who is courteous and kind in commanding others is weak.
- xii. They are to be warned a few times and then removed, crucified if needed.
- xiii. This is how to ferret our arrogance which is unteachable and never learns
- xiv. Arrogant people think they are smarter than the leader and eventually must be removed.
- 8. David's ambassadors are all mature believers
 - i. They will respond to his kindness and thoughtfulness
 - ii. Subordinates must never be degraded or embarrassed by leadership.
 - iii. These men had done their job very well and they were not at fault in being mal treated.
- 9. Authority is never designed to express arrogance but take responsibility for others.
- 10. Arrogance destroys leadership potentiality and sensitivity to feelings of subordinates
 - i. Subordinates must be reprimanded but never be degraded.
 - ii. David is both thoughtful and considerate of his subordinates who have been embarrassed and degraded by the king of Ammon.
- 11. Exercise of authority demands thoughtfulness of those under you.
 - i. It includes sensitivity to and thoughtfulness of those under your command
 - ii. This is very important to teachers
 - iii. The bad boy the disruptive student often turns out to be the best one of all.
 - iv. These young students almost always have real insecurity problems.
 - v. The information must be presented at their level and there must be a strong rapport built with them to teach.
 - vi. There is a special curse for those who cause children to turn away from Bible Doctrine.
 - vii. *The measure of success in education is turning out generation after generation of people who will never forget you.*
 - viii. When you learn in school some of your greatest memories will be of those teachers who have made an impression on your life.
 - ix. *Some of the greatest contributions of life come from those who communicate ideas.*
 - x. Good teachers must always be sensitive and never intolerant of the child.
 - xi. Teachers must realize that you can learn a lot until you are exhausted and then you must recuperate.
 - xii. You must have sensitivity and thoughtfulness and kindness and consideration of others if you are teaching.
- D. The greatness of David is his sensitivity to others and his thoughtfulness of others.
 - 1. He had a great capacity for love
 - i. For the Lord see the psalms
 - ii. For women see is harem
 - iii. For men under him
 - 2. In the service of king David these ambassadors had been abused and humiliated to the maximum.
 - i. They had had half their beards shaved and their clothing below the waist removed
 - ii. They were marched through each town of Ammon to the point of Jericho.
 - 3. David has thus given these men time for their beards to regrow and heal the wounds of this humiliation.
- E. Exercise of authority and function of teaching or communication always demands thoughtfulness of others.
 - 1. Command responsibility demands sensitivity to and thoughtfulness of those whom you

command.

2Sam 10:5-

v5: When they announced or reported to or brought it to light for David, then he, personally, went out to see the ambassadors face to face, because the ambassadors were extremely humiliated and embarrassed. So the king said, "Remain at Jericho until your beards have grown back, and then return."

David #219

Series 631 #219

2Sam 10:6-

- I. The Ammonites prepare for war
 - A. Suddenly it dawned on the ministers and the king of ammon that they had really screwed up in insulting the ambassadors and king of Israel.
 1. Even the most arrogant of people whether smart or dumb or even stupid it eventually dawns on them that they have screwed up:
 2. It suddenly dawns on the people and the ministers and the king that they should not have humiliated these ambassadors of David.
 3. Of all the sins in the Human Race the one you pay for the most are the Mental Attitude Sins
 - i. Arrogance is the worst of all Mental Attitude Sins
 - ii. More believers are disciplined for arrogance than anything else.
 - iii. Most of these are not even aware that they are a pain in the neck for God.
 - iv. For most of these there has to be one real crisis or unusually tragic event to allow one more chance for the arrogant to straighten out.
 - B. Principles:
 1. Arrogance had better hindsight than foresight
 2. The impulsive act of maltreating the Jewish ambassadors has now been related to reality but the time to relate to reality is before the act.
 - i. In the United States of America we are taught to relate after the act by cinema
 - ii. We need public execution of criminals by hanging them from lamp posts, hanging them from their own trees, drawing and quartering them
 - iii. Liberalism in all forms is arrogance and thus not related to reality
 - a. They are anti police
 - b. They are for criminals
 - c. They ignore the victims
 - iv. The impulsive act of maltreating the Jewish ambassadors has been related to reality resulting in panic
 3. During the incident these people were stimulated by their arrogance and after the incident they suddenly realize their error in antagonizing the Jews
 4. It just occurred to them that David was the #1 soldier of the age
 - i. The king of ammon had a beautiful body guard and great numbers of soldiers but they were not battle worthy.
 - ii. The king of ammon has to face the facts that his impulsive decision to abuse the ambassadors from David precipitated a war which they have no hope of winning.
 - iii. They were very prosperous nation and should have wanted peace if possible.
 5. The lesson here is THINKING BEFORE ACTION.
 - i. If you are motivated to action by impulse as motivation 9 out of 10 times you will be wrong and the 10th you will only have slight justification.
 - ii. If you are going to do something impulsive or violent think first because everything you do in life which is good must come from thought not emotion.
 - iii. If you are motivated by thought with regard to your actions you have a chance because it is inevitable if you learn any doctrine you will be motivated by Divine Viewpoint.
 - iv. Arrogant types never think before they act and they never will make it in life until they get more humility.

- v. Doctrine can bring us to the point of humility but not always.
 - vi. A lot of people are too arrogant about the Bible Doctrine they learn
 - vii. Doctrine when learned can stimulate humility or can stimulate arrogance.
 - viii. The day for impulsive action is gone it is inevitable in a declining society that there will be maximum arrogance.
 - ix. The most arrogant people are LOW CLASS people.
 - x. When a society degenerates the balance of arrogance is found in the lower class
 - xi. This is why we have revolutions it is the origin of revolution
 - xii. Revolution is the impulsive arrogance of scum and lower classes or like in France of the middle classes.
 - xiii. Revolution always starts from arrogance and is always impulsive.
6. It is impossible to withdraw the impulsive action
- i. An impulsive action cannot ever be withdrawn and you can apologize for ever and it will never help.
 - ii. You always pay for the impulsive acts.
 - iii. The only way to NOT repeat these impulsive actions is to be consistent in Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine
7. Arrogance is often an unseen and unknown sin to the one who harbors it.
- C. There are only 2 great armies left in this area of David his having defeated all the others.
- 1. The Jewish Army who had already defeated everyone else
 - 2. The Dorians who are not in the area as of yet and when they get to the area it will be under Alexander the Great
 - i. They will drive out the Mycineans, the Philistines etc.
- D. The Ammonites were not militarily effective but they had MONEY and they hired the Aramaians who generally were mercenaries.
- 1. Bethrehab is the capitol city of the mercenaries of the Aramaians who were 6 nations of mercenaries
 - 2. They had a confederation leader.
 - 3. Zobah had a unique kingdom with part of the kingdom on each side of the Euphrates
 - 4. They had great mineral wealth and great soldiers.
 - 5. Maacah had the smallest kingdom Josh 13:13, 1Chron 19:7
 - 6. Tob which was a very prosperous kingdom and a border state between Syria and Ammon and had great soldiers. Judg 11:3
 - 7. The total force here was 33,000 and all great Syrian soldiers and closely related to the Jews.
 - 8. Isaac married an Aramaian or Syrian Rebecca.
- E. David sent his army in charge of Joab and in his strategy he tried to go around the combined armies to give him a better advantage
- 1. The city state of Tob was left out by Chronicles but included by Samuel in order to show the strategic importance of the location of Tob.
 - 2. David sent a flying column at Jericho to follow the road into Rabah not knowing that the Syrian army is located in their path near Medeba.
 - 3. The Jewish army is composed of elite troops like rangers and new recruits
 - 4. Joab was a great soldier maybe even a military genius
 - 5. The army of Ammon was out in front in the north near Rabah as bait for the trap.
 - 6. The army of Syrian was concentrated at Medeba forming a trap of single envelopment.
 - 7. Medeba is about 50 miles south of Rabah
 - 8. David thought the Syrians were in the north and sent his army accordingly but the Syrians had already moved down to Medeba
 - 9. The passage to the valley where Rabah was located was very narrow and rugged and was a change in elevation going up about 2000 feet.

10. When they exit the mountain pass they send out scouts and discover the trap and the syrian army attacking from the rear.
11. Joab fortunately being in a very bad position had the best army in the world at that time.
12. David's strategy was to Attack before the Syrians could come to the south but he was late.

1Chron 19:6-8

v6: When the citizens of ammon saw that they had made themselves malodorous to David, Hanun and the citizens of ammon sent one thousand talents of silver about \$50,000,000 to hire chariots and calvary from Mesopota'mia, from Aram-ma'acah, and from Aram Zobah, ruled by Hadar Rezer.

v7: So They hired for themselves thirty-two thousand troops including chariots plus the king of Ma'acah with his army, who advanced and bivocated before Med'eba in the south. Furthermore the citizens of Ammonwere mobilized from their cities and concentrated for battle.

v8: When David heard the intelligence summary that Ammonites had concentrated at Rabah, he sent Jo'ab and all the army of new recruits including the Ranger Battalions.

F. This is about BC 990 and the beginning of the Ammonite War

1. The Jews are extremely well trained and very very aggressive
2. They have universal military training and here advance into a trap but will use it for their advantage.

G. Principle:

1. David is a mature believer and so is joab
 - i. His professional prosperity as ruler and military general is the imputation fo blessing from the Justice of God to the Righteousness of God in David.
 - ii. This blessing will provide prosperity for the Jews for 100 years.
 - iii. You can be a prosperous business nation like ammon or the hitites and lose everything through military defeat
 - iv. The only prosperity that is safe and solid and continuous comes from Free Enterprise combined with Universal Military Training.
 - v. Universal Military Training is a biblical principle as well as the concept of military training.
 - vi. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment pertaining to Divine Institution #4 nationalism all freedom comes through military victory
 - vii. Neh 4:8-9 13-15 show the spiritual factors involved and is clarified in:

Num 1:2-3

v1: Take a census of all the congregation of all the sons of Israel

v2: 20 years old and upward, whoever is able to go to war in Israel you and Aaron shall muster them by their armies.

- viii. Only exception to conscription is found here:

Deut 24:5

v5: When a man takes a new wife he shall not go out with the army nor be called to active duty and shall be free to be home for 1 year and give pleasure to his wife whom he has taken.

- ix. Another concept is found here that being while you draft new men you send only the best men to fight in the mean time.

Num 31:3-5

v5: And Moses spoke to the people saying Mobilize men for war among you in order that you may attack Mideon to execute the lord's vengance on Mideon, you shall send to war 1000 from each tribe from all the tribes of Israel therefore there war mobilized from the thousands of Israel in training 1000 from each tribe trained men for war.

- x. Military training is not complete without combat experience so the Lord did not permit the jews to conquer all the people in the land.
 - a. The philistines, cannonites sitonians, jebusites, etc.
 - b. These people were to test the military of Israel over the generations.

Judg 3:1-2

v1: Now these are the nations which the Lord left

v2: In order that the generations of the sons of Israel might be taught war, those who had not experienced it formally.

- xi. The levites were also exempt from military training.

2. The new recruits will now be sent into battle but will be supported by the ranger troops
- H. All freedom and all national integrity are maintained through military victory therefore military as a profession is absolutely necessary for any client nation of God.

2Sam 10:6-

v6: When the citizens of Ammon realized that they had become malodorous to David, Therefore the citizens of Ammon sent and hired the mercenaries of the north the Aramaians, the Syrians of Beth-re'hob, and the Syrians of Zobah, totaling twenty thousand infantry, also the king of Ma'acah with one thousand men, and the men of Tob, with twelve thousand men.

v7: Consequently when David heard the intelligence summary that Ammonites had concentrated at Rabah, he dispatched Jo'ab and all the army of new recruits including the Elite Ranger Battalions.

David #220 Series 631 #220 2Sam 10:8-

- I. The Elite Military of David:
 - A. David's policy was to follow the word of God in universal military training
 1. This divides the military into 2 categories
 - i. Those who stay in regular army
 - ii. Those who stay only for their conscription period then return home.
 2. These full time lifers in the military are not like the Elite today.
 - i. The elite today are men of exceptional ability and talent for military function
 - ii. The Rangers, Seals, Merrils Marauders, and Many other special elite forces.
 3. Today the Elite forces are mostly bad for the military in general.
 - i. They siphon off the best leaders to permanently remain junior officers.
 - ii. They are often used in place of full scale use of military groups.
 - iii. This occurs because our military is caught with lack of men and lack of preparation.
 - iv. The United States of America is totally guilty of this and can be wiped out totally by many inferior forces.
 - v. This occurred in World War II with Darbies Rangers and the Marine Raiders at Guadalcanal.
 - vi. No elite outfit has ever won a war and none ever will.
 - vii. It is the citizen soldier with lots of training in a corps or Army group who does the job.
 - viii. In peace time the elite forces motivate others to do as good a job as they can do.
 - ix. There is no use for an elite force in full scale warfare except in raids.
 - x. Wars are won by armies not by companies, platoons or other small organizations but by the infantry getting in under support from armor and artillery and air.
 - xi. It takes about 1 year after a start of the war for people who are professional and good leaders to move to the top.
 - B. David dispatched the recruits and the elite
 1. His elite were not like our rangers or the British commandos
 2. The purpose of elite organization is to motivate other units to do well with pride and hard work and esprit de corps.
 3. David kept these special groups separate from the other.
 4. He sent out 3 of his special forces with their special commanders
 - i. Adino the Spear
 - ii. Eliazar the Sword
 - iii. Shanar the Loner
 - C. The national objective of David was to win the war
 1. His orders to Joab were to Defeat the Ammonites and then consider the Syrians
 - i. When he moved to the battle area trying to avoid a trap he walked into one since the Syrians were professional and smart as well.
 - ii. He found the weaker group in front of Rahab and the Syrians coming to attack his rear flank.

- iii. He is in a very tight spot.
- iv. His orders were to destroy the enemy armies and he was in danger from both areas.
- v. He will put a holding force at Rabah and attack the Syrians.

2.

D. Principles of Warfare:

- 1. These never change despite weapon, uniform and logistics changes.
- 2. Principle of the Objective:
 - i. The purpose of the military operation is to obtain the objective assigned to a particular force.
 - ii. It constitutes the guide for interpretation of orders, formulation of decisions, employment of the means available.
 - iii. Nation and each element of the military forces all have objectives.
 - iv. Under the primary objective to win the war are secondary objectives:
 - a. Destruction of the ammonite army and capture of Rabah
 - b. Destruction of the Syrian army with their professional mercenaries.
 - v. The selection of the national objectives depend on the military and economic conditions which will vary in force and effect.
 - a. Neutralization and destruction of the power of the enemies military forces to give battle.
 - i) This has to occur in battle.
 - ii) You do not capture cities but must destroy the enemy military and its ability to fight
 - iii) Defeat of the enemies main forces as decisively as the means will permit.
 - vi. Possession of localities which will attain the national objective thus occupation of Key Cities or Locations:

Ps 60:6

v6: God has communicated or promised from or by means of his integrity: (David Said) "I will have Esprit De Corps or confidence, first I will draft soldiers from Shechem and mobilize a portion out the Vale of Succoth.

Ps 108:7

v7: God has spoken in his integrity: "Therefore I will have Esprit De Corps, I will draft out of Shechem, and concentrate in the Valley of Succoth.

- a. The vallen of Succoth was the point of concentration and then move toward Rabah and the threat of the Syrians coming from the north changed the strategy but they fooled them and came from the south.
- b. The valley of Succoth
 - i) It is the transjordanian base for Israel.
 - ii) It lays north east to south west and straddles all lines of communication between north and south.
 - iii) It is a road center and has good formations making it easy to defend
 - iv) It was a natural source of food and water and thus ideal logistically
 - v) It was politically stable area.
- c. You cannot ever have military success in a nation which is NOT politically stable
 - i) The United States of America has always had political stability in war and never have we had foreign forces in the country.
 - ii) Generally in the civil war the yankees had a stabilized base since the war was not fought in the north.
 - iii) In the mexican war and 1812 we had a stabilized base despite washington being burned to the ground.
 - iv) In War for Independence we had a stabilized base and the

occupation at west point and northern NY state and capture and holding of New Jersey set up a stabilized base eventually moving to York Town.

- v) The most important thing in fighting a war is to have on the homefront stability, support, patriotism, appreciation, love, concern on the home front.
 - d. In Succoth there was a great pivot of believers in this area and they were very stable.
 - i) The Syrians and Ammonites are going to realize too late its value
 - vii. By departing from his strategic plan David almost got his army into a great problem.
3. Principle of Offensive:
- i. David follows this all the time
 - a. No great soldier is great by being on the defense but must take offensive action.
 - ii. Offensive action is the only means by which a decision is gained in battle.
 - iii. Offensive action when successful brings victory
 - a. defensive action can only avoid defeat.
 - iv. The only effective way to wage war is to act on the offensive for the purpose of delivering a main blow in a decisive direction
 - v. The offensive increases effectiveness of the force using it because it raises morale, it permits concentration of effort and freedom of action
 - a. This applies to business as well.
 - vi. Defensive is to be used only to assist offensive action elsewhere to gain time or use the terrain to compensate for military weakness in battle.
 - vii. Offensive confers great advantages but they can only be used when the means available to provide a means of success.
4. Principle of Mass
- i. This is combat power, numbers, weapons, tactical skill, fighting resolution, fighting ability, morale, leadership, etc.
 - ii. Success in war is attributed to employment of mass in a main effort at a proper time and place for accomplishment of definite purpose.
 - iii. David almost underestimated the enemy because of the syrian strategic single envelopment
5. Principle of Economy of Force:
- i. Means by which the mass is employed in a main effort
 - ii. This is determined by the men, means and their employment at the proper place at the proper time without a great chance of losing them.
6. Principle of Maneuver or movement
- i. Used to bring mass in close grips to the enemy to bring decisive results or place it where it can attack with advantage.
 - ii. The ammonites were holding in front of Rabah as bait and joab moving to attack them
 - iii. The Syrians were waiting in front of Mediba about 10 clicks in front of Rabah.
 - iv. Movement is most effective when concealed.
7. Principle of Surprise
- i. It is essential in some form to obtain maximum effect with minimal loss.
 - ii. It can take the form of time, place, direction, force, tactics, weapons
 - iii. It can be secrecy, rapidity, preparation etc as main factors
8. Principle of Security
- i. All measures taken to guard against the military plans or surprises by the enemy.
 - ii. This was Joab's major problem lack of security and not having concern over being

at risk and it never occurred to him that the enemy might be setting a trap.

a. Apart from the Grace of God he should have been defeated.

9. Principle of Simplicity

i. This is a relative term and means that plans must be as simple as possible.

10. Principle of Cooperation

i. Working together for the accomplishment of a common mission

ii. Teamwork

iii. Air Force working with the army, Marines working with Army without disparaging each other, Navy working with Marines or Army.

iv. Antagonism between army and marines has been devastating in recent wars; failure to cooperate between Air Force and Army

v. The name of the game in war is cooperation and NOT personality conflict

vi. *In Christianity the game is cooperation and not fighting each other and being overly critical of other believers.*

a. Every believer must learn doctrine at their own rate and develop all their own problem solving devices.

vii. Battle of Tannenburg where 2 Russian armies were annihilated with 3/4 million men killed because 2 Russian generals would not cooperate

a. This was the reason the revolution of 1917 succeeded.

II. V8-19 a nation at WAR:

A. v8-14 the southern campaign

B. v14-19 the northern campaign

C. Aggressiveness of the army of Ammon

1. This was Principle of Surprise and they only went about 1 click outside Rabah and dug in and were the bait of the trap.

i. They sent out patrols to further make the trap viable.

2. They came far enough away from the wall of the south gate of Rabah to make Joab think they were ready to attack.

3. Joab was not using good security systems because he could not wait to get to the ammonites and destroy them.

1Chron 19:7

4. The timing was off a little and the trap was not successful because Joab kept on thinking under pressure.

5. He assumed that the syrian army was in the north in support of the Ammonites while it was in the south and under attack.

6. He puts out the recruits in front of Ammon

7. He takes his elite veteran recruits against the Syrians and attacks them.

8. He is fighting on tactical interior lines and either force can support the other.

9. Joab's reserve is his holding force and this takes great military courage.

10. Despite being out maneuvered and trapped he has the advantage of interior lines and the principle of concentration of Mass and and conservation of force to mutually support either way.

11. Joab's greatest attribute was his ability to think under pressure

12. Courage is thinking under pressure while cowardice is emoting or not thinking under pressure.

13. When in doubt attack, when in doubt attack the strongest force is not a valid point

i. Napoleon was a genius in finding the weakest point of the enemy.

David #221

Series 631 #221

2Sam 10:8-

I. Criminals vs arrogant fundamentalist Christians

A. There is no difference between the minds or thinking of the reversionist believers.

1. The same thought pattern which can cause a person to enter crime can also cause the

believer to enter reversionism.

- B. We need to understand Arrogance completely and the importance of avoiding it.
1. When the great disaster occurs in the United States of America the criminal mind will become very apparent when the law fails totally.
 2. No one in arrogance is teachable and they are totally subjective thinking too much of themselves.
 3. Circumstances of life are not a part of creating criminals or reversionists but Arrogance very much is.
- C. Criminals develop extreme deviant thinking patterns which are different than any other persons
1. They are liars and deceivers with little capacity for love and companionship and commit brutal acts without a twinge of conscience.
 2. They disregard others rights to live safely while demanding others show him the utmost respect and admiration.
 3. This is ARROGANCE in the extreme.
 - i. Arrogant people are unteachable giving lip service to authority but having only respect for their own authority.
 4. Intrusion on the privacy of others is a basic criminal Modus Operandi.
 5. It does not bother a criminal to injure others but it bothers him when he is injured.
 6. Untrustworthy himself he demands others trust him, if he gains the trust of others he always exploits it.
 7. There are 52 errors of thinking which develop in the criminal at a very early age from ARROGANCE and it is developed.
- D. The more prominent patterns of the criminal mind include:
1. Being smart or dumb is of no advantage
 2. Extreme fearfulness: it is consummated by fears real or imagined, terrified of physical injury or death and of any event which are rejection of self or put downs.
 - i. This is so pervasive from early age that it almost seems independent of experience or environment.
 3. Extreme persistent anger: Chronically anger is his and he most often boils it within himself but occasionally shows itself.
 - i. It is basic to his personality but the sweet quiet one holds it in.
 4. Zero State: They go through periods of being convinced they are worthless and their situation in life is hopeless.
 - i. This is not depression but appear flat, inert and despairing
 - ii. This is related to guilt complex and total self centered arrogance.
 - iii.
 5. This is NOT depression and they can pull out of it with sheer force of will and replace it with criminal pride.
 - i. They thus have a totally inflexible high evaluation of self.
 - ii. Assertion of this is called manhood
 - iii. They claim to be able to conquer all especially women.
 6. Super optimism being totally disoriented to reality.
 - i. They convince self crime will succeed and will not be caught
 - ii. They block out completely the fears which might permit him to commit the crime
 - iii. They are so occupied with self they tend often to suicide.
- E. Criminals commit crimes by a deliberate act of will being in contact with reality and in control of their behavior
1. They had no concern for their victims and no remorse for the injury they had done.
 2. They all had long criminal histories and were considered NOT GUILTY BY REASON OF INSANITY
 3. These psychologists found only 3% not in control of their actions
 4. The other 97% were sane and used their cleverness to justify self and feign insanity to get

committed to a mental hospital.

5. There they demonstrate a rapid recovery to an illness which they never had.
6. This is ARROGANCE where they always justify their actions and intrusion onto others privacy and seek to justify self being occupied with self.

- F. Criminal thinking is so arrogant that it rejects authority while making overtures of accepting authority.
1. They rejected schools, parents and authorities around them long before they were rejected by them.
 2. They rejected coaches before the coach threw them off the team
 3. They rejected the school authority before it had to throw them out.
 4. They rejected the parents authority before the parents had to throw them out.
- G. While some become criminals others live a lifetime of self righteous anti authority arrogance.
1. Given the opportunity the believer with this mentality will be just as evil, vicious and vile being restrained only by local authority
 2. The Pastor Teacher and fear of being caught bringing shock to his huge arrogance.
 3. Not all criminals are in jail or hospitals or on the street some go to churches.
 4. These people never survive historical disaster and God brings this about to remove these people who are destructive to those with Positive Volition to doctrine.

II. Nation at war:

- A. The Greeks called them Syrians because they always managed to defeat in their high point in history the Assyrians and keep them out of their colonies.
- B. No matter how refined weapons get Infantry is the only part which wins the war.
1. Air, Artillery, Armor all must support but Infantry must win the war.
- C. Principle:
1. The Syrians had moved up to a position 1 mile to the rear of the Jewish army
 - i. They selected their own battlefield to gain advantage
 - ii. They did this by placing the army of Ammon in front of their gate as bait.
 2. This was an ideal spot for battle with visibility and maneuverability
 - i. The Jews have been completely out maneuvered and are caught between 2 armies each which out numbers them.
 3. The trap had closed and the greatest threat to the Jews was the syrian army of crack troops
 - i. Joab had been completely outmaneuvered and there is now PRESSURE on Joab.
 - ii. Joab was in a real jam with great pressure on him
 - iii. Joab under pressure thinks like him being in a tactics class without fear.
 - iv. He is spiritually mature and free from arrogance, pettiness, implacability etc., thus he is able to concentrate.
 4. David is not with the army having remained at headquarters and Joab must fight the battle of Rahab – Mediba
- D. v9-10 is Jewish deployment in battle:
1. In a disaster situation you must face reality and not rationalize the situation and make excuses.
 2. He came to attack the army of Ammon and finds the Army of Aram on his rear prepared to destroy us.
 3. The first part of any solution is to face reality and gather facts which are real.
 4. Joab is forced to face reality as all believers
 - i. We are forced to face reality and then rebound and see the arrogance failure and never forget the lesson but move on.
 5. **To solve problems you must begin with an orientation to reality.**
 - i. The first point of reality is “What a jackass I am” that is describing self as an idiot and can go no lower this obviously places the solution somewhere above.

- ii. Then you must tell God the Father what he knows in rebound including arrogance
 - iii. When you have perspective of being lower than a chigger then there is no way to go but UP.
 - iv. You must see self as we really are and under the Old Sin Nature we are all horses asses
 - v. The first sign of sanity is the true realization of how low we really are
 - vi. Once we tell it to the Lord then we can go on with life and recovery.
 - vii. We must never consider ourselves to be a good guy who just made a mistake.
 - viii. This is basically Self Righteous Arrogance and total fatheadedness.
 - ix. We must get into the sphere of Humility
 - x. **Problems are solved in a state of Humility never in a state of arrogance.**
 - xi. Overconfidence is a problem of smart people thinking no one is smarter than he is.
6. Joab was outmaneuvered because he thought he was the smartest person on the battlefield.
- i. Some believers are very smart people and have a great IQ and with it and arrogance they will be whipped all through life.
 - ii. Some rely on their smarts and sooner or later will face something which their smarts cannot overcome.
 - iii. **There comes a time when we can't depend on our personality, morality, brilliant super intelligence etc, and God will bring us to the point where we must wake up and realize this does not matter in our life but we must depend on the ability of the Lord.**
 - iv. God uses smart people and people who are without brains, sweet people smart people but no one who depends on these things.
 - v. We cannot blame others but must face ourselves before the Lord.
7. **God can get along without any of us but no of us can get along without God.**
- i. Smart, dumb, self righteous and amoral all of us.
8. Joab has already lost the battle being caught between 2 armies both greater than his.
- i. The problem for Ammon and Aram is that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls history.
 - ii. You must start by solving the problem in self realizing our own arrogance
 - iii. Once we become objective then we can start to solve the problem
- E. Joab solves the problem as is typical of the aggressiveness of the Jewish military leaders.
- 1. He will attack and will attack the strongest army first but will attack at the weakest point.
 - 2. He will do the unexpected and attack but at the weakest point.
 - 3. He is thinking in terms of aggressive action thus not emoting.
- F. Principles:
- 1. This was a correct estimate of the situation
 - i. Correct facts are needed to solve problems
 - ii. First he was stupid
 - iii. Second he has 2 armies bigger than his own one in front and one in rear being outnumbered by the enemy 2 times over.
 - 2. He will turn tactical disadvantage into decisive victory
 - i. He will use surprise to attack to the rear.
 - 3. He must attack the strongest army with the elite troops while using the new recruits as a reserve and screening force to his new rear.
 - i. He has the advantage of great discipline and interior lines in the battle
 - ii. He will be able to concentrate quickly using economy of force and mass and surprise.
 - 4. This is what occurs when a mature believer gets in a jam and thinks correctly.
 - i. He has concentrated and learned correct facts and will now under great pressure

- ii. Thinking is reverse concentration from learning.
- 5. When disaster comes to us historically we must be able to think under pressure.

2Sam 10:8-

v8: **And the Army of Ammon advanced out of Rabah and deployed in a defensive position beyond the entrance to the gate; and the Aramaian Syrians of Zobah and of Rehob with 20,000 infantry, including the men of Tob and Ma'acah with 13,000 calvary and chariots, maneuvered alone, not tactically linked with the Ammonite army operating independently to close the trap of the single envelopment, on the field.**

David #222

Series 631 #222

2Sam 10:9-

I. Principle:

- A. You must build a policy on absolute truth and eternal principles and establishment principles.
 - 1. All policy must be based on principle.
 - 2. To base a policy on principle you must have THOUGHT.
 - i. Self Righteousness and Arrogance never form policy because they resist principles.
 - ii. Principles have to be inculcated long before the policy is needed.
 - 3. Every crisis which occurs can be resolved either by policy based on principle or emotion based on expediency
 - i. When there is emotion based on expediency the result is to intensify the disaster.
 - 4. Today there is policy in business and in big business the policy is excellent
 - i. There is no policy in bureaucracy just confusion and pettiness.
 - ii. There is a fight between big business and bureaucracy and if the bureaucracy wins we are in our disaster period.
 - 5. Government bureaucracy is the antithesis of efficiency while business has proven its efficiency.
 - i. To be big business it has to follow principles and these become policy.
 - 6. The Local Church generally has good principles which lead to policies and procedures.
 - i. The local Christian organizations do not follow the procedures and in their organization they are analogous to the government bureaucracy.
 - ii. Where the Local Church has followed the proper procedures there is blessing for the congregation.
 - iii. Principles:
 - a. Every believer in the congregation MUST have his privacy which is a principle of the Royal Family of God priesthood.
 - b. Privacy is essential for the proper function of the Royal Family of God
 - c. Policy comes from this and says that if someone comes to another person and he wants nothing to do with that person, then that person must be removed from the congregation.
 - d. When one person bothers another believer in a congregation in order to protect privacy that person must be removed from the congregation.
 - e. Privacy gives every believer the chance to take in Bible Doctrine at their own pace and grow at their own pace.
 - f. All this and all other procedures and principles are and have been eternally spelled out in the doctrine of the word of God.
 - iv. Good principles cannot be put into effect without matching personnel
 - a. This is why people must be removed from the congregation.
 - b. Believers must be focused on taking in Bible Doctrine and not other people's business.
 - c. Good leadership must be completely understanding of people under his command, understanding personnel
 - d. Making best possible use of people and their capacities and

understandings.

e.

B. Joab as a leader:

1. He makes correct use of his personnel and selects those whom he knows can do the job.
2. He chose his veteran troops who were elite troops to fight against the more formidable army of the Syrians.
 - i. You have elite troops because they raise the standard for all others in the military.
 - a. When elite troops are mixed in with others this always motivates to raise the standards.
 - ii. It is the best place to train leadership in all categories, non-commissioned and commissioned men provide when the crisis comes you break up the elite forces and distribute them throughout the regular forces with promotion to lead.
 - a. The training is severe and the discipline is greater and the requirements are above and beyond and these troops attract good leadership and good potential leadership.
 - b. Elite troops are very great pools for leadership in the ranks.
 - iii. They always have Esprit De Corps and this is one of the most important thing in the function of people under discipline
 - a. This gives better response to discipline and better orientation to discipline, and those who respond to discipline have good Mental Attitude.
 - b. Mental Attitude is the greatest issue of all
 - c. In learning Bible Doctrine you must have a good Mental Attitude
3. He is a great leader and is constantly thinking about options and potentials, how to use his men and where to deploy them
4. He chose to engage in the attack those best qualified to carry out the objectives using a very small force against a much larger force.
5. Syrians were very good in battle and had proven themselves many times over.

C. Principles:

1. Know you enemy
 - i. Joab had studied all the people around Israel
 - ii. He knew the Ammonites did not like to attack but liked to fight a defensive battle.
 - a. They were good at defensive operations and had good aggressive offensive troops which liked to operate from a defensive base.
 - b. He knows the Ammonites will not make the first move even though they have some great warriors.
 - c. Thus he put the new recruits against the Ammonites to hold them off.
 - iii. He knew that the Syrians liked to attack so the best operation against them is to attack them with a very fast moving force.
 - a. Syrians were attacking over and over again.
 - b. Joab waited for a weak spot and then hit that.
 - c. Any attacking force in its attacks have a weak spot and no attack ever goes off uniformly without forming a weak spot.
 - d. You cannot ever attack individually or as an army without creating a weak spot.
2. Rabah is one of the most strongly fortified cities in that part of the world
 - i. It was first fortified by the Giants and the Ammonites rebuilt the city on their original system.
 - ii. As long as the ammonites have their back to the gates of the city they will not attack fearing someone would move behind them and cut off their retreat into the city.
3. Joab's plan took cognizance of personnel capabilities and maneuverability and strengths and weaknesses of both his forces and the enemy.

- i. This plan requires good discipline and courage and above all great leadership.
- D. Leadership Passage:
1. You cannot be a good leader and practice jealousy or any Mental Attitude Sins
 - i. You must never desire to run with the crowd taking on the thinking of the crowd
 - ii. Leadership must think independently
 2. You cannot be a great leader without being authority oriented
 - i. Great leaders are first good peons
 - ii. A great leader must be willing to take it before giving it.
 - iii. All good leaders start at the bottom.
 - iv. Only arrogance wants to start at the top.
 3. Good leadership is not given to slander maligning or gossip
 4. Best thing you can do as a leader is to grow to Spiritual Maturity
 5. Essence of military leadership includes:
 - i. Respect for authority
 - a. Proper use of authority without abuse of authority comes from the bottom up
 - b. No one can execute authority properly without first coming through beast barracks.
 - c. The one who executes authority properly are always those oriented to authority
 - d. No one can exercise authority until he can think in terms of authority orientation.
 - e. This is why some are bad leaders at any level of their relations.
 - ii. Leaders are organized
 - a. Some people are not able to be leaders because they cannot organize anything in their life.
 - b. Until you can organize self you cannot organize self.
 - iii. Don't ever discount the principle of spiritual life in military or any system of leadership
 - a. In both spiritual and military or any other life style there must be self discipline.
 - b. Self discipline is what puts you on top in any area of life.
 - iv. Relaxed Mental Attitude is absolutely necessary for leadership
 - a. This is developed from self discipline
 - b. A sense of humor comes from this
 - c. The sense of humor and the Relaxed Mental Attitude is indicative of lack of arrogance
 - d. Relaxed Mental Attitude, self discipline, orientation to discipline and authority are signs of true inner humility.
 - e. The greatest arrogance comes most often from the lower classes not the upper classes.
 - f. There is more arrogance among the poor than the rich
 - g. There is less self discipline and authority orientation among the lower classes
 - h. This does not mean that the poor cannot pull themselves up and make it as a leader.
 - i. Today the issue in the lower classes is the world owing something to the lower classes and the bureaucracy comes along and says this is correct.
 - j. Arrogance is found most evidently found in the scum and mobs and the ones who March in opposition to authority. Today in 2012 the OCCUPY groups
 - v. Strong Character

- a. There is a great difference between arrogance and strong character
- b. Strong character emphasizes flexibility
- c. Stubborn people are inflexible and this is NOT strong character
- d. Arrogance + stupidity + inflexibility is NOT strong character
- vi. Lifetime of due diligence
 - a. In any profession this is continued study for all your life.
- vii. Fairness in dealing with personnel
 - a. Avoidance of prejudice
 - b. Understanding all your people
- viii. Executive function of being able to organize self and others
 - a. Categorize, Synthesize, systematize, analyze
 - b. Above all delegate responsibility.
 - i) It is a sign that the leader is thinking when they can delegate responsibility to the right person who will get the job done.
 - c. Leaders never do the whole job
 - i) Leaders must have the ability to find someone who can do it and then let them do it.
 - d. Good leaders always finds 2 sub leaders
 - i) These sub leaders then delegate responsibility under them.
 - e. If the workers do a poor job the leader does not go down to the worker but only to the sub leader
 - f. The sub leader then will crucify the worker who fails.
 - i) And also with reward and praise.
 - g. There will always be a chain of command in any organization.
 - i) One of the signs of revolution is the attempt to bypass the chain of command.
 - ii) When a person bypasses the chain of command the leader being smart will crucify them.
 - h. Leaders often destroy their capacity and potentiality for leadership by allowing the bypassing of the chain of command.
 - i. Good leaders develop good leaders by chain of command functions.

Prov 24:

- v1: Be not envious of evil persons who have the Human Viewpoint of life, nor desire to be with them;
- v2: for the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul study reversionism and devise violence, and their lips talk of mischief or trouble, gossip, maligning, judging, etc.
- v3: Through wisdom a house or Edification Complex of the Soul is constructed, and by understanding doctrine one prepares himself for life;
- v4: by knowledge of Bible Doctrine the rooms or chambers for capacity for life are filled with something of value and something stimulating from spiritual super-grace blessings in time and physical super-grace blessings in time.
- v5: A wise man strong man, soldier lives in the power of Bible Doctrine, and a man of knowledge increases his strength in professional ability;
- v6: for by the art of leadership, a nation or you shall execute war, and greatness resides in the generals or the one who commands there is safety or victory.

2Sam 10:9-

v9: When Jo'ab making a reconnaissance, was forced to see that the face of the battle was toward him from the front and toward him from the rear, he was surrounded, he selected from all the elite veteran troops of the army of Israel, and deployed them against the Syrians;

David #223

Series 631 #223

2Sam 10:10-

I. Principles:

- A. Limited war means defeat and as in Vietnam limited war gives communists unlimited success.
- B. Arrogance blinds you to reality
- C. Self righteousness + Arrogance = divorcement from reality
- D. People who are divorced from reality and taken seriously are destructive

1. They assume they are smart and brilliant and also paranoid thinking they have many enemies
2. In fact no one knows them nor cares about them.
3. People who think they have many enemies they are arrogant and paranoia is intensified arrogance divorced from reality.

II. David and his foreign policy

- A. He had no state department and it did not exist in Israel until apostasy came to the nation
- B. His foreign policy was to have the best and strongest military in the world.

III. Principle of v9:

- A. In this passage dealing with the military there is a spiritual factor which is extremely important:
 1. This is blessing by association
 2. All the young recruits seeing action for the first time and being deployed against the ammonite army at Rahab.
 3. All the veterans the elite force is now being deployed against the very great syrian army.
 4. This whole army will be blessed by association with Joab the mature believer.
- B. Association with mature believers is the only reason that some people are alive and enjoying some level of prosperity
 1. There is direct blessing from God providing it to a person associated with a mature believer.
 2. There is indirect blessing from the mature believer directly to the person associated with them.
 3. There will be indirect blessing from Joab to the army in the battle by means of his decisions and tactics.
 4. There will be direct blessing from God as well for great success in battle.
 5. Joab the nephew of David #2 soldier in the kingdom is a mature believer and there will be blessing by association
- C. The ammonite / syrian coalition has the best strategy and tactics to this point.
 1. The Syrians executed a brilliant single envelopment trapping the Jews between the army of Ammon and that of Syria.
 2. Where the spiritual factor is concerned the superior plan or best tactics do not always work out.

IV. V10:

- A. The balance of the men were put under the authority of Abashai the brother of Joab both nephews of David and both great soldiers.
 1. No one can exercise leadership without delegation of authority
 2. Delegation of authority is a person with power trusting someone else.
 3. Delegation of Authority becomes a sacred trust.
 4. No organization can ever work when those at the bottom dictate policy
 - i. Labor cannot tell management how to run the business
 - ii. Students cannot tell administration nor instructors how to teach classes.
 5. A leader who does not delegate authority is never going to make it and his organization will be in chaos.
 6. An absolute rulership is where a person is smart enough to understand that he cannot do everything and must delegate authority.
 - i. Don't try to set an example by doing everything yourself being the first in and the last out.
 - ii. A truly good leader can sit and watch the others under him carry out the policy.
 7. Tyranny is an arrogant person trying to do all of all things himself and run down everyone to the lowest level.
 8. You cannot have any organization function properly where the authority is retained by only one person and is not delegated.
 9. You cannot have any organization function properly where the people have all the

- authority as in democracy, anarchy, revolution.
10. It is imperative that a person who has authority never clings to authority this is arrogance.
 11. It is wisdom and humility to give of his authority a little here and there.
- B. Victory in war depends on the function of professional regular army line outfits while special limited tactical success depends on elite units
1. There are places for regular, elite and reserve units.
 2. There must be discrete lines of distinction so that the person in charge can determine when to use each.
 3. Any person with authority must be able to think categorically in terms of personnel.
 4. Never take on leadership unless you can think categorically about people, and unless you can divorce your emotion from becoming involved with people to whom you give authority.
 - i. You can trust people you do not like based on their abilities and skills.
 5. It takes teamwork between line outfits and elite corps in cooperation to win victories.
 6. Eliteism can become a form of arrogance unless you maintain the concept of team work.
 - i. It is all right to have great Esprit De Corps but not to become arrogant.
 - ii. Arrogance on either side of the elite or line outfit destroys teamwork.
 7. Each organization in a group must understand its own worth and its contribution to the total overall victory.
 8. Each person has a right to his own military preference but no organization can be rejected because of arrogance or stupidity.
 - i. There must be Esprit De Corps not arrogance.

2Sam 10:10-

v10: And the rest of his men he put under the command authority of Abi'shai his brother, and he, Abishai, arrayed them against the Ammonites.

David #224

Series 631 #224

2Sam 10:11-

- I. The 2 most remarkable periods in Human History occurred in 1200 BC and 1000 BC around David's life time.
 - A. The Assyrians had been conquered about 200 years before David.
 1. Into the area had come all the Greeks as Phrygians, Myceans, Carians, Lydians settling into ancient Greece.
 2. They then conquered the Hitites and moved into the area of Mesopotamia and were stopped by the Aramains called Syrians.
 3. These people the Syrians were the greatest conquerors of the period of David defeating the Hitites, the Assyrians being related to the Chaldeans.
 - B. The success of the battle of the Jews against the Aramains and Ammonites was based on spiritual factors and establishment principles:
 1. David maintained a strong army with universal military training and great general staff and spiritual growth.
 2. The battle was structured by Joab to use Interior Lines and mobile force functions.
 3. Joab had great troops and GREAT staff to plan and organize the battle and execute it.
 4. Staff work is some of the most important functions in battle organization from the time of beginning of warfare.
 5. These people, Aramains would have conquered the world if it were not for the description of the war in this chapter.
 - i. There would not have been 5th century BC Athenian prominence in history
 - ii. No western European civilization
 - iii. No client nation to God.
 - iv. Had Joab panicked and been defeated the Jews would have gone down in the 5th cycle of discipline and world history would have been totally changed.

- C. Principle:
1. Never sell brains short
 2. If you are commanded by a stupid person you may be great and smart and a good combat soldier you are not good unless led by brains.
 - i. The brains may be moral or immoral this has no bearing on the function of leaders in battle or in general leadership positions.
 3. All fundamentalist Christians are not stupid just the ones which the public meets
 4. Leadership must be smart and the people who lead in any system should be the smartest.
 5. Stability in the economy comes from big business not little business.
 6. The greatest inefficiencies in history are found in the the Bureaucracies of the United States of America.
 7. We are left in the world as a believer to think doctrine using the same concentration we use to learn doctrine to then think it.
 8. When you learn to think because you learn to think Bible Doctrine you are consistent in your pattern of living and you are happy and consistent
 - i. Once you establish principles in your soul doctrinally you never have to change your plan of life.
 - ii. You may have variables in life but you never have to change your plan of life.
 - iii. Whatever the circumstances of life with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you will have stability of game plan and variations in life will only pull out different doctrinal concepts.
 - iv. Our game plan for life is the whole realm of Bible Doctrine which must be resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and will meet every variation or problem and we will never stop thinking.
- D. The Aramains were purely semitic people and very fierce
1. All the great peoples of this area are Semetic
 2. Abashai has a very difficult problem and a very difficult job.
 - i. He must look as if he is going to attack the Ammonites but NOT attack remaining available as a mobile reserve for Joab.
 3. You lose your edge of finesse if all you can do is think to KILL KILL KILL.
 - i. The smart ones are the ones who have to look like they are going to kill but are holding back.
 - ii. Smart officers are never to be overlooked or ridiculed
 - iii. It takes both the killer combat soldier and the brains of the leadership to win in combat.
 - iv. Smart leaders look for traps and means of developing systems of tactics and strategy or supporting other systems of tactics and strategy.
 - v. God has given us brains to think with and Bible Doctrine to use in our thinking.
 4. Joab learned doctrine then used the system of concentration by which he learned doctrine to apply doctrine and to think under pressure.
 - i. There is nothing wrong with Esprit De Corps but without thinking the energy of wanting to kill and attack is stupidity.
 5. Joab will not allow his small force with enemy on two sides to try to HOLD a piece of Ground.
 - i. Holding tactics and digging in will allow the larger force to eventually get you.
 - ii. The secret of the small force against the large force is to be so mobile that the enemy could never get to your force.
 - a. Nathan Bedford Forrest
 - iii. The secret to fighting an enemy which outnumbers you is MOBILITY.
- E. Guerrilla warfare:
1. How do you meet an enemy when the country does not do the job through Guerilla warfare

2. You must never be in one place too long but strike and move to another area
 3. It takes more courage, wisdom, honor and character to fight this kind of war than any kind of fighting.
 4. Don't hold a piece of ground to die on but give it to your enemy and then come back and kill them on it.
 5. Joab's plan allowed for a plan which allows for success or failure and does not change whether winning or losing.
 6. If both enemy armies attack together and are too strong then these 2 groups of Jewish army will support one another in a strategic withdrawal.
- F. All great thinking is flexible in everything in life EXCEPT Doctrine.
1. Joab's plan was to defeat these 2 armies but he said if we don't do it today let us wait and do it another day.
 2. Arrogance and Self Righteousness are a combination in people which makes them inflexible.
 3. Abashai is screening and supporting as a mobile reserve and will not commit to battle himself.
 4. Joab's plan is great because they are on interior lines.
 5. A spiritual giant is capable of meeting any great crisis and this is anyone who has the Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the preparation and maturity and honor code system and flexibility in everything in life except doctrine.
 6. This battle will be so great that the whole aramain nation will panic.

2Sam 10:11-

v11: Consequently he gave orders in part saying, "If the Aramains or Syrians overpower me, then you will come to my rescue as a mobile reserve; but if the Army of Ammon overpowers you, then I will march and help you and cause you to be delivered.

David #225

Series 631 #225

2Sam 10:12-

I. Principle:

- A. It is always the great leader who has a plan and never departs from it but has variations of the plan for all exigencies
- B. No matter how great the planning, staff work, the brilliance of the staff officers, the greatness of leadership, the great tactics and logistics something can always go wrong.
 1. With more than 5 people in a plan the chances of something going wrong are 100 to 1
 2. As you add more people to the plan the chances of something going wrong exponentially increase.
 3. Thus the ability of a plan to succeed is based totally on the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
- C. It is the easiest thing to lose a battle with brave, well trained, courageous men without good staff work.
 1. Behind every victory there must be some thought
 2. Behind every thinking leader there must be Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for the best thoughts.
- D. For the believer, Courage in battle is the application of doctrine to the abnormal conditions of combat
 1. For the unbeliever soldier Courage in battle is the application of some Laws of Divine Establishment principle to the abnormal conditions of Combat

II. Joab's General Order to the Troops

- A. Joab as the mature believer with greatness of spiritual status and military leadership has come up with a great concept of how to handle this crisis also recognizes the battle is the lords.
- B. The order contains 3 concepts:
 1. Combat personality and the importance of courage in battle

- i. At the execution of the plan there must be courage to execute it
 2. Motivation for battle, freedom through military victory and the concept of the client nation to God
 3. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History
- C. Battle courage is the ability to think under pressure and to do your job as you would do it without the pressure of battle.
 1. This is NOT emotional or impulsive courage.
 - i. Only the German Army gives decorations for a commander or soldiers thinking under pressure and doing the proper job at the proper time.
 2. *There must be the ability to do your job under combat conditions and to man weapons until it is not possible to do so any longer and then improvise to make the enemy uncomfortable as possible.*
 - i. This is the same as function in life being able to think under pressure
 - ii. In combat a man has to be trained for combat in order to be able to learn their job and then do it under pressure as well.
 - iii. All hero's have to know his job and be able to perform it well.
 3. *This is also true in business where everyone wants to start from the top.*
 - i. ***We have lost the true perspective of growing in business from infiltration of other peoples from other nations and from groups who think they deserve something for nothing.***
 - ii. ***The races in this country who were enslaved were enslaved because of Divine Discipline from God for their nation having a LACK of the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment.***
 - iii. ***They bring this to our society and the cancer has spread to the United States of America and now we are also under Divine Discipline.***
 4. The United States of America today is asking for the same reason the African nations asked for it in the 19th century being totally anti establishment.
 - i. Then alone came the Arabs who enslaved these nations and given to Yankee ship owners and sent to the United States of America and sold into slavery.
 - ii. The black man in the United States of America today is 1000 percent better than he would be in Africa.
 - iii. Without the Black people in the United States of America we still have white people with Old Sin Natures who are fouling up our whole society.
 - iv. The Old Sin Nature is not limited to skin color or race.
 - v. The only solution is Bible Doctrine.
 5. If you cannot concentrate on a subject you do not like you cannot ever become a good soldier.
 - i. The younger generation cannot cope with problems in our society because they cannot sit still and learn Bible Doctrine.
- D. Motivation for Battle:
 1. Being in the military demands that a soldier wearing a uniform has to act like a man even if his is not.
 2. The military is the only source of freedom for a nation apart from Bible Doctrine
 3. It is the battlefield which provide for national freedom NOT the politicians who takes freedom from the nation.
 - i. Erosions of freedom occur when politicians and bureaucrats regulate life for the citizens.
 - ii. We have grown up under big government which restrains our freedom and when government says it is good then we can be sure it is BAD.
 4. When we compromise our freedom then we go to war to win it back.
 - i. The problem is that the last 2 wars, vietnam and Korea were not fought to win back anything especially freedom.

5. These Jews in Joab's army are fighting for the principle of the client nation to God.
- E. Principle:
1. A general who is humble must always recognize that the army must do all that they were trained to do but VICTORY depends on the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and his control of Human History
 2. Joab's general order for this battle brings the battle into the realm of divine control of Human History and the function of the Jews in the Plan of God.
- F. All the cities of the client nation belong to God
1. These cities all have evangelism and life of the people and must be preserved.
 2. If cities are taken and destroyed there will be no life in the nation.
 3. The entire nation is the property of God and it all belongs to him.
 4. How a government administers the property of God determines if that government will survive.
 5. This client nation was established in the land by military conquest in the time of Joshua and military function is needed to maintain their freedom and status of the client nation.
 6. Political function can only maintain when it functions best what is purchased on the battlefield.
 7. The whole function of government is to guarantee the results of victory on the battlefield.
 8. Government has no right to interfere with any form of free enterprise unless crime is involved.
 9. They have no right to try to control the thinking or purchasing power of individuals unless they are criminals.
 10. The more immoral the government becomes the more they talk about morality.
 - i. Red China treaties, Panama, communism, Islam, etc.
- G. To solve these problems in our nation we must go to war to get our freedoms back.
1. The problem is that we do not have a strong young generation to support our efforts to regain our freedoms.
 2. Freedom through military victory is the only answer to our loss of freedoms
 3. The means of appreciation of what you have in freedom is the spiritual factor.
 4. The spiritual factory is gone today and we used to have presidents who wrote volumes on the spiritual factors of American life.
 - i. Theodore Roosevelt
- H. Having done everything perfectly right Joab recognizes that you still don't win without the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
1. This is why the south had to lose the civil war.
 2. There would be no United States of America today if they had won and thus no client nation.
 3. They were right in their fight and lost because the nation was made into a great client nation.
 4. From this nation the greatest evangelism and bible teaching has come from the south directly after the civil war in the United States of America
 5. There was GREAT and accurate bible teaching.
 6. This lasted in this nation until World War I but there still was a great spiritual factor in World War II when the greatest generals always gave credit to God.
 7. It basically does not exist in our military today.
- I. Sanity Principle #1 in a world dominated by communism or Islam
1. The best preparation can be neutralized by God
 2. The worst situations can be converted to victory through divine intervention.
 - i. This is true in military, business, national status, love etc., everything in life.
 3. If the United States of America survives for any length of time in 2012 and beyond it will be because of divine intervention and because Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History.

4. The efforts of man does not bring success in any aspect of life but only the control of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in personal, local, regional, national and international history.
 5. In all aspects of our life, we depend on the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
- J. Communists who are coming back and Islam are moving rapidly to destroy us.
1. Foreign policy of these nations is designed to take and take more from the United States of America and when it is convenient turn it against the United States of America.
 2. The people of the United States of America are the dumbest people of the whole world.
 3. We still are here because the Lord has given us another day to live.
 4. The survival of the United States of America depends only on the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
 5. There is nothing we can do to placate the Lord and the only thing we can do is be faithful:
 - i. Faithful in the intake of Bible Doctrine, rebound and Filling of God the Holy Spirit
- K. Principles:
1. We must still have proper preparation in the military and to have great tactics but recognize that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History
 - i. He has used the military of the Jews to perpetuate their client nation for more than 100 years after this time with preservation of the canon of scripture and evangelism.
 2. When God disciplines the client nation the people are sloppy in their thinking and leaders are reversionistic.
 3. Good leadership is the result of true client nation activity.

2Sam 10:12-

v12: Be strong, stand fast mentally with stability of mind, be courageous, concentrate with Divine Viewpoint thinking, and let us establish, confirm, or guarantee freedom and integrity for our people, and for the cities of the client nation of our God; and Jehovah manufacture from Grace the Good of Intrinsic value or victory in battle, in his own eyes."

David #226

Series 631 #226

2Sam 10:13-

- I. Principles:
- A. When you are in leadership positions and have done everything possible in your part you have to sit down and wait for the will of the Lord.
 - B. Military preparation is important for freedom and victory
 1. Only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can preserve the client nation to God.
 2. No matter how excellent the leadership in government or the military preparation without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the population in mature believers the nation will not survive.
 3. The more reversionism existing in the nation the more likely the nation will be destroyed.
 - C. 2 people doing the same job, the person doing the job best will be the one with the best Mental Attitude
 1. Subordination to authority is found in Mental Attitude
 2. The difference between loyalty and simple recognition of authority is the Mental Attitude
 3. The secret to doing a job and doing it right is the Mental Attitude of the person.
- II. Joab's General Order
- A. It recognizes the fact the in history no matter how great the preparation and military efficiency Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ can destroy or neutralize professional proficiency under the principle that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History
 - B. It also applies that God's plan and purpose will be manufactured out of every battle including Joab's battle.
 - C. The invading syrian mercenary army will be defeated and Ammon will retreat behind the walls

of Rabah.

- D. David will lead another campaign with a large field army into Syria and break the back of the greatest power in the world, the Aramain power that year.
- E. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is God and he is perfect and he can only manufacture what is perfect thus he will manufacture victory for Joab out of his perfect essence.
- F. Perfect God has a perfect plan for imperfect persons and in this case they are the Jews of the army of Joab who have done their best to prepare and the blessing of God will go to the Absolute Righteousness in Joab and the mature believers of the army because of their Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- G. The client nation must be perpetuated.
- H. The plan is administered under the title of Grace where man neither earns nor deserves the victory in this battle.

III. v13-14 the battle of Mediba – Rabah.

- A. Mediba was south of where the Syrians were attacking
- B. Rabah was the city of Ammon and fought where the Ammonites were dug in.
- C. Joab was being aggressive using the principle of Offensive:
 - 1. It is the only action by which a decision is gained.
 - 2. Offensive brings victory while defensive is the action which can only avoid defeat.
 - 3. Only effective way to conduct a campaign is operate on the offensive fulfilling the objective of destroying the enemy army (not capture his cities)
 - 4. The offensive increases the effectiveness of the force adopting it, raises morale, permits concentration of effort and allows freedom of action.
 - 5. The defensive should be used to assist the offensive action elsewhere to gain time use good terrain compensate for weakness and to maneuver for advantage.
 - 6. Offensive should be used when there is any reasonable chance for success and sometimes where there is NOT.
- D. Mass is combat power:
 - 1. It means concentration of combat power at the point of maximum effectiveness
 - 2. Mass includes numbers of men, weapons, tactical skill, discipline, morale, fighting ability, motivation and leadership.
 - 3. Success in warfare is obtained by proper employment of Mass in a main effort of attack at the proper time, place and accomplishing a definite purpose.
 - i. You must think logically and effectively to succeed in the military.
 - ii. To succeed in the military you must start in the lowest rank and learn as you go up in rank no matter how much genius you may have.
 - 4. Through Joab's function of interior lines he is able to principle of mass perfectly and this principle is 4000 years old.
 - 5. This also shows us the economy of force which is the means by which mass is employed in the battle efforts.
 - 6. The time and place of the main effort having been determined, Men and Means are conserved by reducing their employment in other directions to the minimum consistence with safety.
 - 7. Joab used the principle of movement and maneuver of combat elements
 - i. He moved them in such a way in offensive that he moves mass in such a way that they were deployed against weaker Syrians.
 - ii. Joab moved his elite forces in order to bring them against the Syrians in the best position.
 - 8. Obedience to the word of God always pays off and David obeyed in peace time and it payed off in this time of battle.
 - i. Joab was promoted by David not because he was family but because he was the 2nd greatest soldier in the land at that time.
- E. This is a small force advancing against a much larger force

1. This requires training and discipline
2. The more training and discipline there is the more lives will be saved in battle.
3. The execution of commands through the chain of command is what brings victory.
4. The large professional army of Aram the Syrians ran from the Jews with a smaller force.
 - i. Israel has doctrine – Aram has none
 - ii. Israel has leadership with doctrine – Aram has poor leadership without doctrine
 - iii. The both have great soldiers
 - iv. The key to success in battle is Leadership and doctrine.

F. Principles:

1. It is possible that Joab understood that even before he committed his troops to action that the final factor in the battle was going to be the spiritual factor.
2. He understood where two armies of equal ability but not of equal numbers are in battle the final issue is the spiritual issue.
3. There is also the principle of Spiritual Maturity and blessing by association.
4. Not only is Joab the leader a mature believer but the victory is also blessing by association he and the army being mature believers and all associated with David.
5. The victory is blessing from the Justice of God to the Absolute Righteousness in the mature believers.
6. Joab had fantastic professional prosperity in the military and he was a mature believer smart and not arrogant, a genius like his uncle David.
 - i. Genius can be a trap for arrogance and this divorces them from reality and they are a pain in the ass.
 - ii. Arrogance causes genius to be divorced from reality
 - iii. Arrogance destroys the potential of genius
 - iv. Potential is only converted to greatness by being minus arrogance and have the spiritual factor and great discipline.
7. This victory assures freedom and integrity for Jews on the east bank of the Jordan, Rubin, Gad and 1/2 of Monassa the ranches and cattle there.
8. This part of Jewish territory is freed from enemy invasion and destruction of freedom.
9. This syrian army was by far as the toughest army they would ever face being accustomed to aggressive action.
10. There is no substitute for military victory in maintaining human freedom
 - i. There is no treaty or agreement which can take the place of victory
 - ii. Treaty without victory guarantees the perpetuation of warfare and aggression of the enemy, and ULTIMATE Defeat of the nation
 - iii. This is what we did in Korea and Vietnam
 - iv. Every time we sign a treaty with russia or china we are defeated.
 - v. When we do this we have betrayed the sacred trust of the Client nation to God.
 - vi. When you make a treaty without victory you will be defeated somewhere down the line and then again and again.
 - vii. You have to beat the enemy and then sign a treaty to keep the freedoms which you have had in the past.
 - viii. To defeat communism or islam we will have to go to war personally or nationally and kill enough of them that they will want to know where to sign the treaty.

G. In the United States of America we owe no blessing to labor nor the bureaucracies of washington

1. It has been in the past BIG business to which we owe our greatness in the United States.

2Sam 10:13-

v13: So Jo'ab and the elite veterans in the small army of Israel which were with him advanced to battle against the advancing Syrians who outnumbered him about 5 to 1; and they panicked and fled before him.

David #227

Series 631 #227

2Sam 10:14-

- I. Ammonite Retreat

- A. Rabah of Ammon is now called Amman in transjordania 22 Miles from the Jordan River
 - 1. It was so fortified that it would take 2 years of seige to take it 2Sam 12:26-31
 - 2. 250 years in Amos 1:14 is still occupied with Ammonites and their demonism, child sacrifice, and
 - 3. Jer 49:2-3 is when Nebecannezar invaded the area.
 - 4. 285 BC the city was changed to Philadelphia after the ruler of Egypt of that time.
 - B. The retreat of the Ammonite army was what precipitated the seige of the city.
 - 1. It was inevitable that they would lose the war because their whole concept of war was defense and defensive armies cannot ever win.
 - 2. Nations with small armies must take the offensive by use of Guerrilla warfare.
 - 3. Communism has defeated the United States of America in Korea and vietnam because of use of mobile force of civilians learning to use weapons and attack the conventional forces by hit and run until they cause them to leave the country.
 - 4. It is imperative for David to defeat the offensive army of syria before going after Ammon.
 - C. When there is victory on the battlefield there must be victory celebration in order to perpetuate the principle of military victory and its importance
 - 1. The United States of America is the only nation who does not do this.
 - 2. Joab returning to Jerusalem was preceded by a lot of activity.
 - 3. They had to first collect all the arms and set up a retaining force to keep the Ammonites in the city so that they could be dealt with next spring.
 - 4. Then a reconnaissance force had to be sent along with the Syrians in order to keep them moving away from Israel.
 - 5. The rest marched home to celebrate.
 - D. The victory celebration:
 - 1. It would be first recognize the spiritual factor
 - 2. Then the army would be awarded for their victory and paraded through the city.
 - 3. Then all the people would celebrate there would be leave for the troops and rest.
 - 4. There would be worship at the tabernacle and recognition that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was responsible for the victory.
 - 5. Victory cannot ever be divorced from spiritual factors and that fact that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls history.
 - E. Principle:
 - 1. The average young man in Israel at that time was the greatest potential soldier in the world and all he needed was professional training.
 - 2. This military would guarantee for 100 years peace in Israel
- II. The northern campaign v15-19 against Aram the Syrians.
- A. The Syrians followed the old caravan trail home in retreat passing Rabah.
 - B. When Joab left he left a small force to cover the area and keep the Ammonites in the city.
 - C. When the Syrian army regroups it will be a threat to Israel and thus the battle must continue in a new war.
 - D. The military must never be separated from the spiritual factors in the nation.
 - E. Authority is taught in the military and also in Bible Doctrine
 - 1. Bible Doctrine teaches authority of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Human History
 - 2. In addition doctrine teaches authority of the Pastor Teacher and the doctrines of God.
 - 3. If you have Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine you are motivated to accept the authority of the Pastor Teacher and the policy of the Local Church and to place yourself under authority to use freedom to grow
 - 4. FREEDOM is irresponsible without authority
 - 5. Irresponsible freedom is conquered by a system of authority.
 - 6. Our education system today glorified communism and islam and both have fanatical systems of authority and our education system and people want to glorify these systems

failing to realize that the authority they despise in the free nation is intensified in the communist nation and there the authority is enforced by DEATH of the anti authority person.

7. Today the anti authority person is glorified as a hero while they in fact are imbeciles
 8. Authority is a spiritual principle as well as a principle of the Laws of Divine Establishment and without it there is no way freedom can survive.
- F. The first function of the professional military organization is the accumulation of Facts.
1. The problem in life is that people try to live without facts divorced from reality.
- G. The Syrians have the greatest empire in the world at that time and have been defeated by a very small nation and a very small army.
1. They had stopped and conquered many of the great conquerors of that time period but were themselves stopped by Israel.
 2. All of the Syrians were divided into small confederated city states but all had one ruler
 3. They used this system to provide better military training for their people.
 4. Their ruler was Hadarezer or in Hebrew Hadadezer and he had a great confederation of soldiers like the greeks who attacked Troy 200 years.
 5. They were disturbed by the fact that 1 Jewish soldier was better than 5 Syrian soldiers and they knew they had to destroy Israel.
 6. They believed in tactical and strategic aggression so they mobilized their whole force.
 7. Their national product was military and they hired themselves out for battle to whomever would pay them.
- H. Principles here:
1. When there are 2 great nations like Aram and Israel and great training and the same toughness and ability the deciding factor must be thinking
 2. The thinking results in the best motivation and this motivation and thinking comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 3. Thus the spiritual factor is the most important and the decisive factor in any battle.
 4. Hadadezer and Hadarezer are the names for the ruler and the king of Zobah and understands the crisis when he sees it.
 5. In the United States of America one thing that has never been properly evaluated has been that the United States of America has been defeated by a 5th class nation in a war.
 - i. It has never been discussed as a political issue and never been raised as to its implications.
 - ii. The generation of young people in 1970's between 18 and 32 have never faced the fact that they had accepted the defeat
 - iii. Some of these young people actually contributed to the defeat.
 6. WE did not catch this but the communists did and it indicates that we can be conquered at any time.
 7. WE LOST the Vietnam war not militarily but the attitude of the young people especially which lost it.
 - i. We have not only lost it but done nothing to correct the reasons why we lost.
 - ii. The first thing that needed done was universal military training especially those who went on campus strikes and marched against the war and put them in for 5 years of intensive training.
 8. Our only chance today is Guerrilla warfare.
 9. Our military is not run by the military but by the state department since roosevelt truman and these men are cowards, yellow communist socialists bastards and evil to the core.
 10. The only countries where there is a military coup de tat is where the nation is controlled by Roman catholicism and when the revolution occurs they go to the antithesis of catholicism that being communists.
 11. Both catholicism and communism are strong systems of authority and these people can only function under strong authority thus the military coup de tat.

- i. France, Spain, South American countries.
12. Never has there been a coup de tat in an Anglo Saxon country like England and the United States of America where there is a strong republic.
13. The only way a nation can have a total national effort against communism is to have the training and authority of a strong military.
14. These people when out of military training will then properly respect authority in general life and especially business.
15. This respect is learned in any area where someone has the genius to establish a norm where people MUST function under that norm or standard.
16. Arrogance is anti authority and people with Humility are properly organized and properly function under authority.
17. We talk about freedom without having freedom and cover the fact that we do not have freedom by talking about LOVE.
18. You cannot have freedom without freedom nor freedom without authority
19. Freedom without authority is anarchy and authority without freedom is tyranny.
20. These principles are part of God's system for the client nation and it is God's intention that the client nation follow these principles.
21. We are believers because we have the freedom under evangelism to accept Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and doctrine.
22. We are free to take in Bible Doctrine and grow or say no to doctrine.
23. The reversionist uses their freedom to say NO to authority
24. A reversionist accepts his freedom and not the authority of doctrine thus is an anarchist under a system of arrogance.
25. There are churches which take away the freedom of the people emphasizing authority with the result of self righteousness a system of arrogance.
26. These systems are antithetical but have arrogance in common
 - i. If Arrogance or pride accepts freedom in reversionism it rejects authority
 - ii. If Arrogance or pride accepts authority in legalism it rejects authority resulting in self righteousness.
27. They fail to see authority and freedom are mated and must go together.
28. You must be free to accept the authority of Bible Doctrine and you must have privacy in the Local Church to do this.
29. You have freedom in privacy to come or not to learn Bible Doctrine
30. This privacy must follow some rules of authority they being no talking or moving or in any way disturbing another who is trying to learn the doctrine they accept.
31. Where freedom and authority are mated there is never an arrogance problem.
32. Where there was stubborn arrogance there is lack of teachability.
- I. Hadadzezar will now gather all the Syrians in all the areas of the nation and bring together a huge army against Israel.
- J. The Jews must prepare by:
 1. Worship and further development of the pivot of mature believers.
 2. Military training
 3. Planning on the part of those capable.
 4. Good social life
 5. Putting all this together in the soul of the individual, Authority and Freedom.
- K. Hadarezer is a genius in the northern kingdom
 1. Hadar is the name of the syrian God
 2. Ezer means help
 3. The name of the name of the ruler was Hadar will help us.
 4. The greatest empire in history at that time had a motivation from something greater than their own power thus they had a false God.
- L. There always must be a motivator above and beyond military training.

1. Any power building up a military through good training must never neglect a higher motivation for the men.
 2. Since the God of war for the Syrians here is demonism it will never work out.
 3. Thus we can extrapolate that the demonism of Islam will never work out if we as a client nation can get ourselves back to God.
 4. The client nation has the good motivation from God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit and the believer must always have the motivation from doctrine and the unbeliever must have the motivation from Laws of Divine Establishment
 5. An army without motivation can be defeated.
- M. Syrians were famous soldiers and the Selucids from Alexanders conquests extended Syria from north of Palestine in the area of Damascus to India.
1. They are semitic and cousins of the Jews. Deut 26:5
 - i. Rebecca the wife of Isaac was Syrian.
 2. These are semitic with intermixing of greeks.
 3. David's army also had Greek soldiers.
 4. Throughout all the ancient world the Greek soldier fought in every army of the ancient world.

2Sam 10:14-

v14: And when the army of Ammon saw that the Syrians retreated and fled in panic, they likewise fled in retreat before Abi'shai, and entered the city. Then Jo'ab returned from fighting against the Ammonites, and came to Jerusalem to celebrate victory.

v15: And when the Syrians realized from their reconnaissance that they had been decisively defeated by the small army of Israel, they mobilized their entire Aramaian force.

David #228

Series 631 #228

2Sam 10:16-

- I. The Vietnam War: Magazine Article .. Air Defense .. written 1976; by Lt Col. Ret. Thomas E Bearden
What really happened in the air defense battle of North Vietnam.
 - A. It was fought as type 2 war where the people were the base from which all the military was derived.
 - B. The only way to win the Vietnam war was to totally destroy North Vietnam, men, women, children, and all the cities, towns, and villages.
 - C. USA is not prepared to fight type 2 war a Guerrilla type war in addition we allowed the north Vietnam military to build up an air defense system instead of totally destroying north Vietnam with nuclear weapons.
 - D. In addition college professors encouraged our youth to engage in outright rebellion and protest marches and even draft evasion.
 1. Not realizing that the peasants were in fact the source of the military build up in Vietnam the students and people of the United States of America sympathized with the Vietnamese.
 - E. Book, Strategy for Defeat, by Adm USG Sharp; in Vietnam civilians controlled our decisions and thus were the cause of the defeat of the United States in this war.
- II. David's War:
 - A. Aramains originated from Nahor, Abraham's brother both descended from Nahor's son Kemio.
 1. Nahor's Second wife was mother of several Aramian groups
 2. Rebecca, Isaac's wife was aramain
 3. They were Nomadic and took advantage of the collapse of the Hitites and caused the collapse of Egyptian empire.
 4. They contributed to the destruction of the first Assyrian Empire.
 - B. V16:
 1. As head of the confederation Hadarezer he had defeated the Assyrians and as a result of this there was a permanent army north of the Euphrates
 2. They dominated Mesopotamia at the time of the war with David.

3. David's conquest of these people set them back for a very long time.
 4. Syrians were very warlike and a great business complex taking over many trade routes of the time between Asia, Europe, and Egypt.
 5. Their military cut into the trade in the area and almost down to modern times they could handle great business endeavors.
- C. Ps 60:2 Aram of the Rivers
1. The 2 armies of the Aramaians one north and one south of the Euphrates were combined by Hadarezer for the first time in about 10 years.
 2. This is one of the most critical periods in the history of the Aramaian empire.
 3. Aram Zobah, Aram across the river were the 2 armies Ps 60
 4. Zobah had been defeated but combined with the northern army it would be the greatest in the world at that time.
 5. Shobak is a great general and has never lost a battle, defeating the Assyrians, the Natani, the sea peoples, and has defeated every army in the world moving across the area of Mesopotamia.
 6. Shobak had been commander of the north army and now assumes command of both armies.
 7. This is the greatest threat to David in all his time as ruler.
 8. These armies are both concentrated at Helam ready to launch an attack against David.
- D. In the United States of America today most people think like the communists and today in 2012 like the muslims want them to think.
1. The only cure is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- E. The crisis of David
1. The Laws of Divine Establishment are operating in Israel thus there are a large pivot of believers.
 2. The civilian population and the army are united in their desire to defend their home land.
 3. In the United States of America World War II was the last time the civilian population supported its men in war.
 4. The civilians from that time opposed war totally.
 5. In David's day the support of civilians for the military was based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of both civilians and military personnel.

2Sam 10:16-

v16: And Hadade'zer ordered the mobilization, and caused to assemble the Aramaian or Syrian mercenary armies, one north and one south beyond the Euphra'tes; and they concentrated at Helam, with Shobak the prince or commander of the combined army of Hadade'zer assumed command of them.

David #229

Series 631 #229

2Sam 10:17-

- I. 1970's Islam is rapidly advancing in the world more than any other religion and is challenging even the soviet union for world domination.
 - A. Islam is an anti American conspiracy just like communism
 - B. If Islam and Russian communism ever get together it will be a conspiracy greater than any other in Human History
- II. The Battle of Helam:
 - A. Any military function must be based on facts obtained by intelligence services and provided to the commander by the staff functions.
 - B. David realizes from his intelligence briefing that this is the most critical situation in all the history of his rule.
 1. The Aramaians had totally mobilized and were intent on overrunning all of the middle east.
 - C. David used concentric interior strategic lines to prepare to meet the Aramaians.
 1. This decision was strategically important because it changed totally all of middle eastern

- history.
 - 2. He moved into the valley of Succoth to set up his base and this area was an ideal area for a base with water, agriculture for food and metallurgical technology.
- D. At Helam David met Shobak and the battle began.
- E. The middle east will be ruled for over 400 years by semitic peoples
 - 1. Aramaians
 - 2. Assyrians
 - i. After the Jonah Revival with the spiritual factor.
 - 3. Chaldeans
 - 4. Jews now are a new species under the protection of God himself.
 - 5. All these nations were tough semitic peoples.
- F. After this the Indoeuropeans will control the middle east
 - 1. First with the Persians with Cyrus the Great
 - 2. Then Alexander the Great
 - 3. Then the Helenistic Empire
 - 4. Finally the Romans.
- G. The aramaians were professionals and chose the battlefield and set it up to their advantage
 - 1. David had no advantage in this battle.
 - 2. David's only advantage is being on the offensive and he is meeting them in strategic offense outside the borders of Israel.
 - 3. He can do this because the civilian population is for him and support him.
- H. When you have to build up your population animosity and antagonism against the enemy by allowing the enemy to build up and take the offensive you lose something in the process.
 - 1. FDR did this in World War II because he did not think the American people would stand for a war
 - 2. The American people do not have the ability to stand behind the military fought elsewhere.
 - 3. The only way americans will get behind the military is to have their own cities bombed and people raped and tortured.
 - 4. When you have to arouse a civilian population emotionally to support the military you are a weak nation.
 - 5. We reject the concept of the spiritual principle that all freedom is won by military victory and never by politicians who in fact lose freedoms constantly.
 - 6. The average American looks down on the military and this is part of a communist propaganda situation beginning in 1932 and continuing to today.
 - 7. This was successful totally in Korean War and later in Vietnam
 - 8. The STUPID president Harry Truman relieved d Douglas MacArthur the most brilliant military leader in his time.
 - 9. When the communists realized that they could control the thinking of the civilian population of the United States they knew that they could always defeat the United States because the people are not behind the military.
 - 10. The communists have gone out of their way to avoid anything which resembles Pearl Harbor.
 - 11. They have instead reversed the strategy by making the United States military look the villain.
 - 12. Even patriotic Americans who fought in World War II had succumbed to the communist propaganda strategy and support cowardice in the youth of the nation.
 - 13. Everyone who has enemy forces on their soil is influenced for a very long time. EX Sherman marching from Atlanta to Savanah Georgia in 1864 still influences politics in Georgia and thousands of people vote democratic ticket no matter who is running.
- I. David's genius
 - 1. He fights outside the borders of Israel.

- i. The danger is that the enemy however can select the battlefield and terrain which is favorable to them.
- 2. His civilian population supports him.
- 3. His civilian population had the spiritual factor in place.
- 4. David is on the strategic offensive but is tactically defensive during his deployment.
 - i. If the enemy were to attack at this point they would inevitably win the battle and maybe the war itself.
- 5. Tactical advantage lies with the Aramaians and the strategic advantage with the Jews.
 - i. When tactical offensive and strategic offensive meet it is tactical offensive which most often wins.
 - ii. The basic reason is length of lines of communication and logistics.
- J. V17 describes an incredible amount of staff work and requires men who can think and organize the whole situation.
 - 1. Heroes of battle are non existent without food and ammunition.
 - 2. The army cannot live off the land without losing continuity of the military force.
 - 3. When an army tries to live off the land the forces break down to small groups foraging for food.
- K. Principle:
 - 1. War cannot be won by armatures it takes professional
 - 2. Professional military training is a science requiring mastering more so than any other scientific subject
 - 3. It must be mastered by those qualified and we in the United States have very few.
 - 4. The problem is that we do not have large scale maneuvers because it costs too much money and people in the area complain about such movements.
 - 5. The last person to maneuver a Corps for battle was Douglas MacArthur.
 - 6. Vietnam was a battalion war a small scale war.
 - 7. We do not have enough military in 1970's to stop simultaneous major riots in the major cities of the United States
 - 8. The only thing which might stop it is the civilian population being armed and ready to shoot to kill.
 - 9. The United States today could not take David's army and move it on an FTX like he did in his time.
- L. Staff carries the army until the battle begins then the Line takes over to fight the war.
 - 1. Staff and line must work together and depend on each other.
 - 2. Our people in the military have no opportunity to prepare and practice troop movements and deployment.
- M. This battle of David's was one of the most decisive battle of the ancient world and stopped the Aramaians changing the history of the region totally.
 - 1. The individual soldier in the Jewish army did his job perfectly and was so devastating to the Aramaians that they panicked and fled from the battlefield.
- N. Casualty List 1Chron 19:18
 - 1. 700 chariots and 40,000 calvary
 - 2. 7000 chariots and 40,000 infantry
 - 3. There was no 40,000 calvary or horsemen in the world at that time.
 - 4. The largest chariot corps in the world existed with the Aramaians at that time.
 - 5.

1Chron 19:18

18: And the Syrians fled before Israel; and David slew of the Syrians the men of seven thousand chariots, and forty thousand foot soldiers, and killed also Shobak the commander of their army.

2Sam 10:17-

v17: And when his intelligence service staff had briefed David, he mobilized the entire military of all Israel, and crossed the

Jordan moving to his northern concentric base, and he advanced to Helam. And the combined Aramaian armies chose their battlefield and deployed themselves to meet David, and engaged him in battle.

David #230 Series 631 #230 2Sam 10:18-

- I. Shobak the Aramaian Military Genius
 - A. About 47,000 men were killed here in the Aramaian army and the death of Shobak was like destroying another 47,000 men since he was the only one able to command the aramaian army, this is what took the Aramaians out of the world domination picture.
 - B. Aramaians were the first to exploit the Camel one of the meanest animals in the world.

Ps 20:6-9

v6: At this time after victories I have application of Bible Doctrine and know that the LORD has delivered his anointed (Here David); he (God) will answer him from his holy heaven or the Higher Headquarters by mighty deeds of the victory of his right hand the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

v7: Some enemies boast by chariots and some by calvary, but we have been caused to remember by Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and to trust or boast in the person of the Jehovah our Elohim, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

v8: They (Philistines and Syrians under Shobak) have been defeated and have fallen and killed but we are established or stabilized or victorious in battle and stand upright in perpetuated freedom therefore we have restored our nation through victory on the battlefield.

v9: Jehovah has delivered the King, answer us on the day when we call.

C. Principles:

1. The result of winning the battle of Helam was continuation for the client nation Israel
2. This means perpetuation of the Laws of Divine Establishment which center on freedom.
3. Freedom is needed for evangelism and spiritual growth through Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine
4. Freedom is the status of the principle live and let live the uncaused cause of human function through human volition.
5. Therefore Freedom becomes legitimate self determination exemption from necessity or tyranny self fulfillment through one's own volition, the privilege and franchise of the Human Race.
6. The primary issue in freedom is VOLITION.
 - i. In the Plan of God the Laws of Divine Establishment protect the individual in evangelism and the unbeliever has the right to say yes or no to the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and to Bible Doctrine taught after salvation.
7. Freedom is exemption from arbitrary control and cannot exist without 3 factors welded into the Laws of Divine Establishment
 - i. Privacy
 - ii. Property
 - iii. Authority
8. Privacy
 - i. The environment for freedom
 - ii. You cannot have freedom without privacy and cannot have privacy without freedom.
 - iii. Objective of Government is to protect privacy unless you are a criminal and violate the laws of privacy first found in the decalogue.
9. Property
 - i. You have the right to property and property is a motivation for others to advance in business and profit.
 - ii. Profit is a legitimate Christian function.
 - iii. It is the responsibility of freedom and the Modus Operandi of freedom.
10. Authority
 - i. Under Laws of Divine Establishment freedom and authority are mated and you

- cannot have freedom without authority
- ii. Freedom without authority is anarchy and revolution
- iii. Authority without freedom is tyranny and dictatorship
- iv. In life there have to be rules to allow everyone to exercise freedom without interfering with the freedom of another person.
- v. Freedom without authority in spiritual realm is antinomianism
- vi. Authority without freedom is legalism
- 11. No client nation to God can function without these 3
 - i. Socialism is the enemy of these principles and this doctrine.
 - ii. Socialism conquers by destroying freedom with the concept of equality
- 12. Freedom and equality cannot coexist
 - i. If you have freedom you will have diversity never equality
 - ii. If you have equality you stifle freedom.
 - iii. In heaven there will be inequality and inequality is a healthy state.
 - iv. Communism and Socialism reject the concept of freedom.
 - v. First privacy is controlled or removed
 - vi. Then your property will be destroyed by regulations so that you cannot have what you want to have.
 - vii. In the United States of America today the blacks from Africa were captured by Arabs and sold as slaves because their nations had no establishment principles to function under.
- 13. There is no such thing as equality in life ever.
 - i. Freedom cannot guarantee nor manufacture equality in the Human Race and the greater the function of freedom the greater the inequality.
 - ii. With self determination and proper motivation some use freedom to advance to success and prosperity and other to become scum, failures and bums.
 - iii. Freedom is a double edged sword and takes the people fo the nation and through self determination creates either success or failure.
 - iv. From the standpoint of Bible Doctrine freedom is reality while equality is an undesirable myth.
 - v. Equality is the device of the arrogant disoriented sociopath demagog seeking power.
 - vi. Freedom is the heritage of the Human Race a gift from God to resolve the Angelic Conflict
 - vii. Salvation is a freedom function where individual volition is exercised in faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
 - viii. Forced equality is not only the policy of tyranny dictatorship, despotism, oppression bureaucracy and the basis of Satan's eschatology cosmos diabolicas, the pseudo millennium the welfare state.
 - ix. The welfare state is the greatest evil ever to enter into a national entity
 - x. freedom is the policy of God imputed to the Human Race at birth to resolve the Angelic Conflict
- 14. Freedom must have thought from live and let live to the heritage of the client nation.
 - i. Freedom must have exceptions for criminals and loss to a nation of reversionists through 5 cycles of discipline.
 - ii. Freedom is common sense orientation to reality and respect for privacy, property and authority without loss of personal integrity or the fundamental concept that little government creates big people and vice versa.
- D. David is mentioned here despite the fact that he did not actually participate in the battles because of his genius organization.
 - 1. Because of his orientation to doctrine God was glorified by his victory.

2Sam 10:18-

v18: **And the Aramaian armies panicked and fled from the face of Israel; and David slaughtered from the Syrians seven thousand charioteers, plus forty thousand infantry, and mortally wounded Shobak the prince commander of their army, with the result that he died there.**

David #231

Series 631 #231

2Sam 10:19-

- I. War in the Client Nation continued; results of the battle of Helam:
 - A. All decisions must be based on facts
 - B. Decisive victory saves casualties in war.
 1. Generally what occurs is decisive victory shows the enemy that you will not stop until you have destroyed them and they thus surrender
 2. Vietnam and Korea were the result of indecisive decisions by our politicians and military and resulted in a great number of casualties.
 - C. One great victory over an enemy saves casualties and expense of continued war campaigns.
 1. We do not recognize in the United States of America that one way to save considerable money is to remain constantly prepared militarily.
 - D. Around 1190 BC when the Hitite empire collapsed great changes occurred in history and it took about 200 years for them to consolidate.
 1. This resulted in the Aramaians ruled the region
 2. In David's time the defeat of the Aramaian confederation resulted in no threat to Israel for another 100 years.
 3. In 780BC Tiglath Pollesar captured Damascus and ended the rule of the Aramaians (Syrians of the ancient world)
 - E. Principle:
 1. Never be antagonistic toward Israel at any time in their history this is antisemitism and punishable directly by God.
 2. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls history:
 - i. At the time of David neither the Hitites nor the Assyrians nor the sea people dominated the area but the Aramaians.
 - ii. These Aramaians were subject to occasional attacks by the Assyrian empire and these had been put down and the Assyrians had withdrawn.
 - iii. The defeat of the Aramaians by David had secured his northern frontier.
 - a. The northern pressure of the Aramaians caused phrygians to control western turkey and was the beginning of western european civilization.
 - iv. All western civilization comes from Judeo Christian principles and the people who moved to inhabit the shores of western turkey becoming the Mycinean Greeks
 - v. Prosperity comes from 3 systems,
 - a. Biblical Principles of Free Enterprise
 - b. Principle of Profit
 - c. Spiritual Factor of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
 - vi. David ruled for 40 years and with Solomon there was peace and great prosperity in Israel for about 100 years.
 3. There is only one way to stop tyranny once it starts and that is through killing the enemy in war.
 - i. The only way to stop crime and criminals is to kill the criminal
 - ii. The only way to stop criminal nations like Russia and Red China, and now Islam is to KILL so many of them that they do not want to bother with us any longer.
 - F. Syria of that day the Aramaian empire sat at the cross roads of the tigris and Euphrates rivers

and enabled David to control a lot of what occurred in the whole area.

1. Turkey is the bridge between Europe and Asia and held the major caravan routes the middle east and india and china.
 2. This will bring great commerce to the area to the area and also maritime development by the Phoenicians who will control the seas all the way to the borders of the United States of America
 3. Without the Jews controlling Mesopotamia there would have been no:
 - i. Rise of the Phoenicians
 - ii. No alphabet
 - iii. No language we have today
 - iv. No concepts of thought from the development of language and alphabet.
 - v. The vikings also developed maritime functions but they did not contribute to civilization as did the phoenicians.
 - vi. This would bring 1 century of great prosperity to the middle east region.
- G. The Secret to peace at any time.
1. Military victory results in fear with controls nations which are out of control.
 2. The victory with great violence and decisive defeat gains respect from warlike nations.
 3. There is no substitute for military victory and the only thing which evil nation respect is force greater than their own
 4. You cannot through treaty or bribes with foreign aid protect a client nation from aggression of communism or today islam.
 5. No nation is secure without a strong military establishment and this is Christian doctrine.
 6. Peace overtures without military victory is a guarantee of perpetuation of war.
 7. Peace treaties made without victories results in defeat by treaty and then by military.
- H. It is the battle which causes the victory
1. It is always warfare which guarantees peace.
 2. The next time there would be such peace was when Rome defeated everyone in the region again.
 3. After victory there must be establishment of the client nation to provide evangelism and teach Bible Doctrine and other factors such as missionary activity for other Positive Volition.
- I. In the Jewish Mishnah in Sotah Chapter 8 is the prayer for the Jewish soldiers for 100 years after the victory at Helam.

2Sam 10:19

v19: And when all the kings in the Aramaian confederation who were under Hadade'zer, the ruler of the confederation, learned from their intelligence reports that they had been decisively defeated by Israel, they surrendered to and made peace with Israel, and became subservient or subject to them. Therefore the Syrians feared to give aid again to the children of Ammon.

- II. Further results of defeat of the Aramaians.
- A. V1-5 Is a quote from Ps 57:7-11
 - B. v6-13 is a quote from Ps 60:5-12
 - C. This is the results of one great victory and one great battle.
 1. Dynamics of life are found in the ability to think under pressure
 - i. David demonstrates this militarily and here spiritually.

- ii. Whatever thoughts you get into your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul must come from the Left Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - iii. David concentrated to learn Bible Doctrine to put into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and thus can reverse the concentration to apply the doctrine to experience.
 - iv. David's victory results in peace in Israel and prosperity and he demonstrates his spiritual maturity.
 - v. He applied this with Goliath the Philistine and with more added he applied this doctrine when Saul pursued him and now he applies it to the Aramaians at Helam
 - vi. He has fixed a doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and will never depart from it.
 - vii. He knows the ability to think Divine Viewpoint is the key to all functions in life and his application of doctrine in this battle gives 100 years of prosperity and peace.
2. Music is used to express Esprit De Corps after the battle.
 - i. Song will not bring you through the battle
 - ii. After the victory singing is appropriate.
 3. Believers express honor through worship
 - i. Worship is concentration and concentration is perception of Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. The only purpose for gaining knowledge is to prepare one for application of that knowledge to life.
 - iii. David gained knowledge in:
 - a. Military function
 - b. Rulership
 - c. Bible Doctrine
 - iv. It was the concentration which took Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul reversed that allowed him to apply knowledge to the battle of Helam.
 4. The battle of Helam which David won was the basis for incredible changes in history.
 - i. God gives people a certain amount of time under the Laws of Divine Establishment and when that fails they are then destroyed.
 - ii. This battle was important for the next 500 years.
 5. What made David so great:
 - i. The mature believer never forgets the source.
 - ii. He applied the doctrine of the battlefield to understanding the source of all victory.
 - iii. With maximum doctrine one avoids arrogance
 - iv. To enjoy victory one must remember the source of all blessings.
- D. The United States of America could as a client nation disappear into history very easily never to be heard from again.
1. WE have failed in our responsibility as a client nation
 2. Failed to recognize the source of our:
 - i. Blessing
 - ii. Prosperity
 - iii. Opportunity
 - iv. Privilege of being a client nation
 3. We have forgotten the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
 - i. If Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ does not promote, bless , and if he is not the source we have nothing.
 - ii. As we have success in our time we ignored the basis for our blessing in time
 - iii. Socialism, Communism, Islam are all conspiracies to defeat us without the

- iv. battlefield.
- iv. We have become trained to think in satanic evangelism in the form of socialism and communism.
- 4. David fails occasionally as well but here remembers that the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is the source of all we have.
- 5. When Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ decides we or our nation are finished Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ will use some evil nation or person to destroy us totally.

Ps 108

v0: A Song. A Psalm of David.

v1: My Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is stabilized, Oh Elohim! I will sing praise and concentrate in playing music on the psaltry (a result of victory)! In addition or also expressing my Honor!

David #232 Series 631 #232 Ps 108:2-

- I. Victory Song of David to commemorate the Battle of Helam
 - A. David's honor is his Spiritual Maturity and the function of the Royal Family Honor Code.
 - 1. This is an expression of his blessing from God as a spiritually mature believer realizing that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History and it is he who provides victory in battle for us.
 - 2. Whatever you do in life whether by talent or ability or success only has maximum exploitation through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - i. This exploitation is realized and fulfilled through Spiritual Maturity
 - B. David's greatness as a musician is realized because of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and his music is part of his capacity for life and is more greatly meaningful.
 - 1. Music glorifies God.
 - i. We sing and use music in our Spiritual Life because of Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and growing capacity for life and awareness of how wonderful, challenging and meaningful is it to live in the devils world under the support of the Plan of God
 - 2. The victory over the Syrians is to be reduced to music and sung as an epic poem.
 - i. Great music masters do not need to hear music but are able to think music.
 - ii. The analogy is that thinking music is analogous to thinking doctrine.
 - iii. If you can think music you have music and if you can think doctrine you have doctrine.
 - 3. Because of the victory of the battle from the Lord he was so excited that he played and sung all night long and would thus awake the dawn
 - i. He recognized that anything meaningful and wonderful in life is from Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History
 - ii. The winning of this battle will result in changing of Human History completely and development of western european civilization because of it.
 - 4. It is not the tune but the lyrics which count in the music.
 - i. Music always appeals to the emotion
 - ii. The lyrics represent thought from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - iii. Thought takes precedence over emotion thus lyrics take precedence over the music.
 - C. V3b Zamar is David being aware that the result of this battle will go down in history.
 - 1. David was not an arrogant person
 - 2. Successful people are not usually arrogant but the most arrogant people are usually the scum of the society
 - D. Doctrine:

1. Doctrine must be the most important thing in life
 2. There are times when it will need be the only thing in life.
 3. Without Bible Doctrine life is meaningless
 4. Success or riches or love or other greatest things in life without doctrine is meaningless and results in misery
 5. Happiness is a fleeting illusion related to moments of success and has stimulation emotionally but is no true happiness without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 6. David has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and he is totally Grace Orientated.
 7. He knows that Bible Doctrine is directly related to his victory over Aram but also that Bible Doctrine will continue to have impact long after he is dead and gone to be with the Lord.
 8. He knows that he is only a drop in the ocean of humanity but doctrine will go on forever.
 9. Doctrine gives him capacity for success and to say a meaningful real thank you to God.
 10. David recognizes that the victory is from the Lord but that the victory is but a small part of the blessing and that Bible Doctrine is the impact of life more so than anything else.
 11. Doctrine has impact beyond the ability to conceive of any believer.
 12. Grace as the policy from heaven was indicated in the first line but he knows that beyond the horizon is always doctrine.
- E. V5: David recognizes that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is directly responsible for his victory but also that God the Father and God the Holy Spirit are also involved.
1. The second line now goes toward earth recognizing that the earth is surrounded in its round formation.
- F. Principles:
1. If God does not promote you you are not promoted.
 - i. The mature believer never loses sight that all blessing is from God.
 2. If God does not provide victory there is no victory
 3. All human security is provided by the Grace of God through learning Bible Doctrine
 - i. The wall of fire principle
 4. No matter how talented or brilliant or gifted there is no victory promotion prosperity apart from the Grace of God and orientation to grace is from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine
 5. There is no security in life apart from the Grace of God and there is not blessing apart from the Integrity of God
 6. God has split his integrity at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, imputing to us the Righteousness of God and using the Justice of God as the initiator of all blessing from God to us.

Ps 108:2-

v2: Awake! O harp and lyre! I myself will awaken the dawn with the singing of this great hymn!

v3: I will praise and celebrate giving thanks to you, Oh Jehovah, in the midst of the army who are still on the battlefield, I will sing praises to you among the nations because of the influence on the nations of this battle.

v4: For Great above the heavens is your steadfast love or GRACE or Mercy, As far as the skies is the impact of your doctrine.

v5: Be exalted above the heavens, Oh Elohim! Surrounding all around the earth is your glory or Bible Doctrine !

Ps 57:7-11

v7: My Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is Stabilized by Metabolized Bible Doctrine, Oh Elohim, I will sing praise and concentrate in playing music on the psaltry (a result of victory)!

v8: Awake, my soul! Awake, O harp and lyre! I will awaken the dawn!

v9: I will give thanks to You, Oh Jehovah, In the midst of the Army; I will sing praises to thee among the nations.

v10: For Great above the heavens is your steadfast love or GRACE Policy or Mercy, thy faithfulness to the clouds.

v11: Be exalted above the heavens, Oh Elohim! Surrounding all around the earth is your glory or Bible Doctrine !

II. Preparation for war:

- A. There must be military training and function prior to warfare
 - 1. The client nation must always be prepared for war because this world is ruled by Satan.
 - 2. Wherever there is freedom and bible teaching it is inevitable that this nation will be subject to attack from any nation under satanic influence.
 - 3. All communist nations and all nations which function under islam are under satanic influence and or demon possession.
- B. Principles:
 - 1. Deliverance in war comes from preparation in peace time, victory in battle is comes from preparation in peace time.
 - 2. Preparation in peace time provides deliverance for abnormal time of war.
 - 3. Victory in battle comes from preparation in time of peace.
 - 4. David is recognizing the principle that from the human standpoint he was prepared for the Aram Ammon war.
 - 5. Therefore the importance of national draft and universal military training.
- C. The subject of this prayer is one prayed before battle.
 - 1. David is recognizing before battle that no matter he is prepared and knows a lot about battle without you God this means nothing.
- D. Principle:
 - 1. The citizens of the client nation to God are delivered on battlefields through military victory
 - 2. Therefore David when he first faced the enemy on the battlefield of helam this was his prayer
 - 3. He prayed that the citizens might be delivered by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ who controls Human History
 - 4. He prayed in relationship to accurate correct Bible Doctrine according to the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment
 - i. The loved ones might be delivered through the Lord causing the military to be delivered.
 - ii. The nation preserves its integrity through victory on the battlefield.
 - iii. He recognized that without Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in the equation the preparation would be worthless.
 - 5. There is an inferential WAW at the end of the verse indicating the reality of answered prayer through establishment doctrine of freedom through military victory.
 - 6. God supplies the military victory so that the battlefield provides the perpetuation of freedom and prosperity.
 - 7. The prayer is before the battle and very short
 - 8. All the ingredients for victory are in the prayer
 - i. The pivot of mature believers in the client nation
 - ii. The mature believer in this pivot are the basis for deliverance but many are in the military and will do the actual fighting.
 - a. There must be a well coordinated military team to execute the victory
 - iii. Therefore there is freedom through military victory
 - iv. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History

Ps 60:5-12

v5: In order that your beloved ones the mature believers as citizens of the client nation may be prepared for war, Cause us the army to be delivered by your right hand the integrity of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, therefore answer us!

David #233**Series 631 #233****Ps 60:6-**

- I. The greatest threat to David in his time was the Aramaians called the Syrians
 - A. In the defeat of Hadarezer and neutralization of the Aramaian empire for 200 years allowed Israel to function as a client nation.
 1. This will allow for the dissemination of the canon of scripture and its eventual completion.
 2. In addition this will result in the development of western European civilization.
 3. This civilization was developed primarily by the Phoenician people and the name is actually from the Phoenician language.
 4. Greeks in their development resulted from the Phoenicians and even their gods were in fact from Phoenician polytheism
 5. Around 1500 BC before the Jews left Egypt the Canaanitish language had word pictures as part of its written language.
 6. The Phoenicians also used pictograms and so did the Greeks and eventually there developed from these 2 areas alphabetic lettering.
 7. People in the ancient world thought in terms of symbols which is very difficult and thus thought did not advance very well.
 8. When lettering allowed words to be formed independent from symbols thought began to make better progress.
 - B. This victory sustained the client nation to God
 1. It also allowed the creation of phonetic syllabic form of writing thus enhanced thinking.
 2. This allowed the average person to learn to read and write thus develop literacy.
 - C. The greatness of any mature believer is his ability to think in prosperity
 1. Arrogance succumbs to flattery and divorces one from reality and thus thought ceases in prosperity
 2. This is the result of lack of concentration on Bible Doctrine and the path to reversionism.
 3. Arrogance is found in a person who is a leader in some great project and people begin to recognize him for doing something very well.
 4. The mature believer can think under Prosperity.
 5. People who can think well under pressure can often NOT think under prosperity.
 - i. Patton could not think under prosperity but emoted.
 - ii. Eisenhower could think under prosperity but not pressure.
 - iii. Robert E. Lee, Thomas J. Jackson are 2 examples of men who could think both under great pressure and also in great prosperity.
 - D. Shechem was the first part of land ever purchased in the later promised land
 1. It has always been associated with the northern kingdom.
 2. The first capitol of the separate northern kingdom after the civil war and loss by David's grandson was Shechem.
 3. A person who have no ability to handle authority will preferentially treat those who he likes.
 4. No one in authority can ever succumb to prejudice in any way.
 5. David will treat the northern kingdom just as he treats the south.
 6. When the battle occurred all 12 fighting tribes participated because David treated shechem just as he treated the rest of Israel.
 7. Fairness and lack of prejudice always pays off when you have authority.

Ps 108:6-13

v6: In order that your beloved ones the mature believers as citizens of the client nation may be delivered from War, Cause us the army to be delivered by your right hand the integrity of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, therefore answer us!

v7: God has communicated or promised from or by means of his integrity: (David Said) "I will have Esprit De Corps or confidence, first I will draft soldiers from Shechem and I will survey the valley of Succoth for a second

military base to operate on concentric interior lines.

Ps 60:6-

v6: God has communicated or promised from or by means of his integrity: (David Said) "I will have Esprit De Corps or confidence, first I will draft soldiers from Shechem and I will survey the valley of Succoth for a second military base to operate on concentric interior lines.

David #234

Series 631 #234

Ps 108:8-

- I. The average American Christian thinks like a peasant
 - A. The leader of red china was invited to Houston and many believers wanted to protest and insult him publicly and even to shoot him.
 1. This is stupid
 2. We individually can do nothing to change the course of communism and evil by insults, protests, shooting or demonstrating.
 3. Demonstrating is a part of the evil of a MOB and these are out of control and the lowest form of humanity.
 - i. STAY OUT OF MOBS and DEMONSTRATIONS.
 4. Violence is not the answer to anything and doctrine and violence do not go together.
 - i. Except on the Military and Law Enforcement and when it is needed to defend against the violence applied against us personally.
 5. Emotionalism is what the peasantry and scum of society use as a means of gaining attention.
 6. The way to meet this man is through WAR and to debate with him.
 7. Protests should have been directed toward our government NOT the chinese.
 - B. Our job is to concentrate on Bible Doctrine as believers in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
 1. With regard to Bible Doctrine we are totally inflexible
 2. The application of Bible Doctrine to situations require a great degree of flexibility.
 3. We must learn to think and to think in terms of Divine Viewpoint and Bible Doctrine
 4. A little bit of thinking can go a long way and must overrule violence or absurdity
 5. The more doctrine we learn the greater its application the greater the flexibility and the smarter we become and the greater courage we have.
 6. Stupidity is never courage but at times passes for courage but in fact is the lowest form of scum of society.
- II. V7 b continued above:
 - A. The valley of Succoth lies northeast to southwest and collected all the major trade routes from the far east into this area.
 1. This was a great manufacturing area in the bronze age and now in David's time in the iron age.
 2. The topography allowed this valley to be defended by a very small force against much larger armies being surrounded by 2 rivers, a badlands, and a couple of narrow mountain passes.
 3. It was the center of a great number of springs and had a great water supply and was a great agricultural area.
 4. It had the capacity for being able to maintain weapons
 5. It had people who are supportive of the military.
 6. No army can be successful in the field unless the civilians are for the army 100%.
 - i. This is why we lost the korean and vietnam war.
 - ii. The pressure on leadership
 - iii. The demonstrations on colleges
 - iv. The news media reporting information which would be revolting to the general populace.

- v. The Celebrities supporting communism publically.
- vi. Both times we had to make treaties without victory these are thus defeat.
- 7. Making peace without victory guarantees that a nation will have to fight again and again until you make peace from winning a decisive victory or until you have been completely destroyed as a nation.
 - i. SALT I is a defeat just like the Korean and Vietnam treaties.
 - ii. Making peace with communism without victory is ultimate defeat.
 - iii. We kick our friends nationally in the face and lick the boots of our enemies.
- 8. The people remain loyal to David here and this was a great doctrinal center
 - i. Even in the Absalom revolution (2Sam 17) David went here to regroup and to be able to defend himself
 - ii. The people were behind him and the army which was there were loyal as the people and from here he organized his troops and went back to defeat Absalom.
- 9. It is interesting that David conquered Zion militarily by WAR, and made it his home base.
 - i. Succoth he conquered by means of Bible Doctrine
 - ii. When a person takes by violence there is always the possibility it can always be lost by violence
 - iii. There is always someone who is better or bigger or stronger.
 - iv. When you win by violence you begin to think you are invincible and invincibility often gets wiped out by age.
 - v. What you consolidate by Bible Doctrine you never lose.
 - vi. The more problems you solve by violence the more problems you have
 - vii. The more problems you solve by doctrine the fewer problems you have
 - viii. Anything you gain by arrogance can be lost by a greater system of arrogance.
 - ix. Anything gained by Bible Doctrine cannot be lost but also is gain in eternity.
- 10. Of all of the decisive battles of history the greatest of all is the battle of Helam
 - i. These psalms 57 and 60 were written before Helam
 - ii. The extrapolations of these 2 psalms for Psalm 108 shows us that we in our society exist because of the victory of this battle.
- B. The importance of being able to think under pressure and prosperity cannot be over emphasized.
 - 1. The greatest thing we have and the most beautiful thing we have is found in our brain our soul.
 - 2. This is ugly until we fill this brain and soul with Metabolized Bible Doctrine
 - 3. This organ is designed to allow us to think in terms of Bible Doctrine for all of our life.
- C. V8 more military policy:
 - 1. There is idiom here in the Hebrew and literal translation would not mean as much:
 - 2. This area is a big ring of mountains with Bashan on the northern edge and Edom on the southern tip and Ammon out in the plain area.
 - 3. This area including all the mountains with their great pastures for cattle and Manasseh settled this area when Joshua took the land from the giants originally
 - 4. These are the Jews on the east side of the Jordan and despite them being separated from the area of Jerusalem they were not exempt from universal military training.
 - 5. If the fight for freedom takes us out of our country we must still go out of our country to defend our homelands.
 - i. Discipline learned in the military prepares men for life
 - ii. Universal military training is often very unpopular and it takes great moral courage for a leader to institute and maintain this principle.
- III. The greatest system of military function is Concentric Interior Lines
 - A. Strategic and logistic support existing in a central area protected by the lines of the fighting force.
- IV. Principles:
 - A. People without policy in a group are less than nothing and worse than nothing forming the

principle of evil.

1. If you do not have policy you will lose out totally.
 2. All organizations including Military and nations without policy will fall apart.
 3. Policy represents authority
 4. There must be authority for freedom to function properly in any group.
 5. Authority minus freedom equals tyranny or legalism in the spiritual realm
 6. Freedom minus authority is Anarchy or antinomianism in the spiritual realm.
- B. Responsibility always means sacrifice on the part of leadership
1. Leadership plus sacrifice minus policy means poor leadership and a breakdown of leadership.
 2. Leadership must set up a system of policy in terms of general principle
- C. Policy is made for about 98% of the people who will follow them.
1. Violations of policy will occur by about 2%
 2. You never make new policy based on the 2% who are outlaws and wierdos
 3. Never make policy on the basis of a small percentage
 - i. The execution of an innocent person results in a change in law to not allow executions.
 - ii. Police having to read the rights to a criminal
 - iii. People cannot shoot an intruder into their home.
 4. You cannot pass laws for the abnormal people but hold them to the rules for the general population.
 5. If you overburden a policy for the small percentage of outlaws the policy destroys itself.

David #235

Series 631 #235

Ps 108:8-

- I. Freedom is the basic issue in the Angelic Conflict
- A. It is what we have in common with the angelic creatures and is what allows us to resolve the Angelic Conflict
1. It is the principle which includes the concepts of Privacy and Property under the umbrella of authority.
 2. An attack on privacy is an attack on freedom whether by maligning or judging or by criminal activity where your home or property is entered without permission
 3. You cannot have freedom without property and vice versa
 4. You must have authority in order to guarantee freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment and must have freedom for there to be proper authority
 5. You cannot divorce one from the other.
 6. Authority without freedom is tyranny and freedom without authority is anarchy.
- B. Freedom means use of volition to advance in life.
1. In the Spiritual Life Positive Volition results in advance to Spiritual Maturity
 2. In the Spiritual Life Negative Volition results in decline through reversionism to the Sin Unto Death
 3. There is NO SUCH THING in life as EQUALITY
- C. Freedom and equality is mutually exclusive
1. Equality destroys motivation and alleges anyone can be equal and this is propaganda for the welfare state, socialism, and communism.
- D. All freedom in life comes from military victory on the battlefield.
- E. The spiritual life is based on the Plan of God for each of us as believers and part of the Royal Family of God
1. $X = \{ \{ \text{Human Life} + \text{Adam's Original Sin} = \langle \text{Condemnation} \rangle \text{ Potential 1 for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone} \} = \text{Hope 1} \langle \text{absolute confidence in receiving Eternal Life at Salvation} \rangle \} + \langle \text{Salvation} \rangle$

2. $Y = [\{\text{Judicial Imputation 1 } \langle \text{all sin to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross and Judgment} \rangle + \text{Judicial Imputation 2 } \langle \text{righteousness of God to the believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God} \rangle = \text{Potential 2 } \langle \text{blessing in time} \rangle\} + \text{Pertinent Bible Doctrine} = \text{Hope 2 } \langle \text{absolute confidence in reaching Spiritual Maturity by persistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization \& Application of Bible Doctrine} \rangle] + \langle \text{maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul} \rangle$
3. $Z = [\{\text{Eternal Life } \langle \text{imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God} \rangle + \text{Blessing in Time } \langle \text{imputation at Spiritual Maturity} \rangle = \text{Potential 3 } \langle \text{great blessing and reward at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and inequality in heaven} \rangle\} + \text{Pertinent Bible Doctrine} = \text{Hope 3 } \langle \text{absolute confidence of great reward and blessing in eternity} \rangle] = \text{Protocol Plan of God}$

F. The Integrity of God

1. composed of the Justice of God and Righteousness of God
2. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive imputation of the Righteousness of God
3. Possession of the Righteousness of God provides us with the opportunity for grace to direct blessing from the Justice of God to us in time.
4. In all aspects of our life the basis for any success or victory or prosperity in our life is based on the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ

II. v8:

- A. You cannot have success in any organization without effective policy
- B. Leadership responsibility is the ability to think under pressure and determine policy and procedure to function under.
 1. Thinking requires concentration under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to learn Bible Doctrine and thinking requires concentration to process the information into decision and action.
 2. Concentration must occur on the intake and must also occur on the output in applying the information to life.
 3. Courage vs Cowardice = concentration vs lack of it
- C. Government is designed to protect and perpetuate freedom
 1. Little government big freedom
 2. Freedom = evangelism and missionary potentials.
 3. There will be wars and rumors of war until I (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ) returns
 4. The only way to establish and perpetuate peace is through strength of the military.
- D. Moab:
 1. From the daughter of lot who committed fornication with her father having gotten him drunk after leaving Sodom
 2. Jews were not to have anything to do with Moab at all.

Num 25:1-2

While Israel remained at Shitim the people began to fornicate with the women of moab for the women of moab invited the Jewish men to the sacrifices of their gods and the people fornicated and bowed to their gods

Num 25:9

And those who died in the plague were 24,000 men

3. Moabites were not warriors but defeated their enemies by subversion and other tactics using demonism and idolatry.
4. The oppressed Israel for 13 years Judges 3:12-13
5. They entered into line of David through Ruth a moabite
 - i. This story of Ruth shows that moabites were trying to subvert the Jews but in this case it resulted in marriage.
6. Saul 1Sam 14:47 fought against Moabites
7. David entrusted his father and mother to King of Moab because he was related to David.
8. 2Sam 8:2 David had to stop the conspiracy by going to war.
9. God has blessed and provided freedom through military victory to the Jews.
 - i. The field latrine is a place where an army urinated and defecated and buried it and moved on.

E. Edom:

1. This is another nation which David did not want to war against but was forced to.

F. Philistia

1. These were the toughest people that David ever faced aside from the Aramaians
2. They were responsible for the defeat of troy
3. In the process the dorians moved in and took all that they had.
4. They moved all over the area of the middle east forming many different groups of peoples and were very aggressive and even became phonecians and in fact almost conquered David.
5. Goliath wore the same armor that Agamemnon wore in the defeat of troy.
6. They were stopped by the Jews allow them to become and remain the client nation to God.
7. This verse says that the Jews saved the world for western civilization.
8. The phonecians moved in the sea all over the world having been to spain and moved out side the straits of Gibraltar to England and even across the Atlantic to the coast of Maryland in the United States of America
 - i. Archeology has found evidence in Maryland of Phonecian and Carthaginian ?? having been there.

G. Those who succeed as believers must never forget the source that being the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

1. We from doctrine we learn that we get our capacity for life, happiness, and blessing in all areas of life from the grace of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and his ability.
2. David prophetically knows that Edom will lead a sneak attack in the south while David was fighting in Helam and he would defeat them removing their threat totally.

H. When a client nation has been rejected by God they are then destroyed by God under the 5th cycle of discipline.

1. It is the responsibility of the United States of America to evangelize and send out missionaries and create a haven for the dispersed Jews.
2. The 5th cycle is often administered by warfare
3. We must address this question today from the 70's through to the present.
4. If we fall into total apostasy and do not fulfill our function of evangelism and missionary

and Jewish haven then God WILL destroy us.

- I. David recognizes that all three members of the trinity are responsible for supporting and helping the Jews
- J. Deliverance by God is desirable while the efforts of man in deliverance is totally evil.
 - 1. The credit must go to the Lord
 - 2. No client nation must ever depend on any other nation for help of any kind
 - 3. When you depend on man your reject the Lord
 - 4. A person without roots of doctrine cannot recognize the Plan of God for his life when it is there
 - 5. These people will live a desert life without roots and poorly and will die the Sin Unto Death before going to be with the Lord.
 - 6. These people who reject Bible Doctrine will live a miserable life and die a horrible death.
 - 7. The believer with Positive Volition will on the other hand die with great blessing and happiness in dying grace.

Jer 17:5-9

v5: Thus says the Lord, cursed is the man who puts his trust in mankind and makes flesh his strength or crutch (the basis of attraction), and his Right Lobe turns away from the Lord (Cosmic Dynasphere - Occupation with People)

v6: For he will be like a tumbleweed in the desert, and will not see when prosperity or good comes but he will live in a parched place in the desert, a land of salt and not inhabited (5th cycle of Discipline).

v7: Blessed or Being made Happy, is the man who puts his confidence in the Lord and whose confidence is the Lord.

v8: For he will be like a tree being planted by the water (Bible Doctrine) and by the river he shall spread out his roots (momentum) and will not fear or be disturbed when the heat or testing comes, his leaves of foliage will be green, prosperous and it will not be anxious in the year of drought or maximum pressure nor cease to yield fruit.

v9: The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul (Heart) of Man is more deceitful than all else and is desperately wicked or dangerously sick, Who can understand it.

Ps 62:8-9

v8: By means of the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine Trust in the Lord at all times, O people of Kelah; Get rid or pour out of the problems from your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul before or onto him; God is a fortification or wall of fire or refuge for us. [Selah]

v9: Absolutely, emphatically, dogmatically, Men of low degree or trashy people are only worthless or empty, men of high degree or aristocrats or rank are a lie or phony; in the balances of the scale they tilt or go up because of emptiness all of them together are lighter than and invisible as breath in comparison to the super-grace believer.

- K. Without Bible Doctrine we have no Royal Family Honor Code
 - 1. without the Royal Family Honor Code we have nothing in life
 - 2. Metabolized Bible Doctrine + Royal Family Honor Code can balance our life and make it meaningful.
- L. Concentration under pressure is a matter of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - 1. This comes from concentration under Filling of God the Holy Spirit
 - 2. This same concentration under Filling of God the Holy Spirit is able to apply this doctrine to our pressure situations
 - 3. Prov 27

- v8: To me Gilead or Gilead is mine; to me Manas'sseh or Manasseh is mine; while E'phraim is the fortification or helmet or security of my head; Judah in the form of my officer corps is my law giver or policy creator.
- v9: Moab is my field latrine having been buried and defeated in battle now respecting David and no longer having conspiracy against him; Over Edom I will cast my military boots (2Sam 8:13-14); over Philistia I shout a victory battle cry in triumph."
- v10: Who (The Lord is responsible for victory) will carry me to a fortified city (Rabah)? Who will lead me to Edom when they sneak attack?
- v11: You have not rejected us, Oh Elohim, have you? Therefore Oh Elohim will you all three not advance in the attack with our armies.
- v12: Therefore give us help or deliver us against the enemy, for EVIL is the welfare or deliverance of man!
- v13: By means of the Integrity of Elohim (ALL 3) we shall manufacture from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, battle courage; therefore he himself will trample down and destroy our enemies.

Ps 60:7-

- v7: Gilead is mine; Manas'sseh is mine; E'phraim is the fortress which protects my head, Judah is my policy maker and officer corps.
- v8: Moab is my field latrine; over Edom I cast my GI boot; over Philistia I shout the shout of victory".
- v9: Who will cause me to carry a fortified city the capture of Petra? Who will guide me to Edom?
- v10: Oh God you have definitely NOT not rejected us, Oh God? Did not YOU invade with our armies Oh God.
- v11: Give us help against the invisible evil jealous arrogant enemies of our success, for worthless is the deliverance of man!
- v12: My means of the Integrity of Elohim, we will manufacture battle courage from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for facing visible enemies; therefore He, Himself (The Integrity of God) will trample our invisible enemies.

David #236

Series 631 #236

Ps 85:8-13

- I. Personal and national victory
- A. cal imperf 'shama' = to hear or listen, TO CONCENTRATE.
1. This is an ability that a person should develop and is one of the greatest attributes a person could have.
 2. Concentration without motivation or interest in any area or subject is highly desirable.
 3. We must be able to focus our attention on something in which we are not interested.
 4. Without concentration you cannot ever grow into an adult.
 5. Maturity in either the unbeliever or believer eludes those divorced from reality.
 - i. These people log more time in dreaming than in concentration.
 6. Music without lyrics does not require thought, and it is a compromise with concentration and results in dreaming.
 7. You cannot dream and have capacity for life since this is divorcement from reality.
 8. Concentration requires self discipline, vocabulary to understand and relate to the information.
 9. Believers can only advance spiritually by listening to someone else teach and to concentrate on what is taught.
 10. Believers who advance spiritually have the ability to concentrate and the motivation from Filling of God the Holy Spirit
- B. Dabar = communication verb
1. Positive Volition is the only way we can learn and face life and understand why God gives us one day after another.
 2. Motivation and momentum of the Christian Way of Life comes from 1Cor 2:16 Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
- C. Doctrine of Grace Apparatus for Perception and the importance of Bible Doctrine is essential here.
- D. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the Absolute Righteousness of God is imputed to the believer to provide a target for blessing from the Justice of God
1. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the only way to develop capacity for the blessing God will provide for the believer.

- E. The issue in any situation personal or national is the mind and the thinking
 - 1. One generation of weakness of thinking will destroy a nation.
- F. Mature believers are under Occupation with the Person of Christ and is a function of the pivot.
 - 1. This is disaster dynamics for each believer.

II. Disaster Dynamics:

- A. These 2 verses 8+9 are the only hope for a nation facing historical disaster
 - 1. This is deliverance from historical disaster and we most certainly need this.
- B. The solution is spiritual with Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and results in prosperity imputed from the Justice of God to the mature believer with his Absolute Righteousness
- C. The result is the gracious ones the pivot of mature believers around which the Lord provides deliverance.
- D. The weakness of mind or state of foolishness in v8 shows the danger of the shrinking pivot caused by believers neglecting Bible Doctrine from arrogance and failure to recognize Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as the source of all blessing
- E. Thus in v9 deliverance of the nation is related to Occupation with the Person of Christ the first characteristic of maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
- F. Glory dwells in thenation only when there is a large pivot of mature believers.
- G. The Plan of God for the nation revolves around a pivot of mature believers.
- H. The most important thing a believer can do for his country is to persist in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine and advance to Spiritual Maturity joining the pivot
 - 1. As goes the believer so goes the nation.
- I. A large pivot of mature believers is the basis for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ delivering the nation in historical disaster
 - 1. A small pivot of mature believers and large group of reversionists is the basis for the 5 cycles of discipline on the nation.

III. Mercy is grace in action and grace is the policy of God

- A. Doctrine is the means of our understanding God it is absolute truth.
- B. Doctrine and Grace meet in the advance to Spiritual Maturity this is the believer in maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- C. Grace and doctrine provide motivation and momentum in the Spiritual Life
 - 1. It is not what we do or say but what we think.
 - 2. Thinking is the basis for all greatness in life.
- D. Grace and doctrine are the reasons any believer remains in time.
 - 1. We are the guests of God and his representatives on this earth.
 - 2. Grace and Doctrine are the 2 things about which we must be totally and completely inflexible.
- E. Grace and doctrine meet in the life of the mature believer.
 - 1. When they meet there is the association and appreciation of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as the source of all things for our life.
 - 2. Doctrine is the thinking and Grace provides the means of concentration so that thoughts of doctrine can pass into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and then later be used for application to experience.
- F. Rom 10:
 - 1. One of the great issues in life is self righteousness vs Righteousness of God imputed to us.
 - 2. Self Righteousness is arrogance
 - i. This wants to do something for righteousness like keeping the law.
 - 3. Righteousness of God is imputed to us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
 - i. Arrogance causes Self Righteousness to win out in the conflict in the believer
 - ii. Moses told the Jews that they were trying to turn the law into a means of salvation
 - iii. Moses told the Jews that salvation is not hidden from them but really available

- through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
- iv. Salvation is as near to you as your mouth and mind.
 - v. Paul quoted this message of Moses given just before he died but changed it to reflect the difference in the Jews status before and after the 1st advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
 - vi. Moses used heaven and the sea to say salvation is not unattainable nor unavailable but near as your mouth and mind.
 - vii. Paul used heaven and Sheol for unattainable and unavailable referring to salvation.
 - viii. Rom 10:9-10 is to use the mouth to express faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and the mind to believe.
4. This says that the greatest failure that the Jews will ever have is that the Jews have blotted out the 1st advent and accepted the Self Righteous Arrogance of the law.
 - i. Moses saw this in the Jews just before he died when Joshua was to take the Jews into the land.
 - ii. Paul finished this 1500 years after Moses and we can still understand 2000 years later why so many Jews die in various situations since they blot Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone from their thinking.
 - iii. You cannot built a system of Self Righteous Arrogance to attempt to gain salvation from God.
 - iv. If you go to self righteousness and reject God's righteousness there is NO salvation for you.
 - v. Most Christians are under the illusion that after salvation they must develop a system of works righteousness instead of accepting the Righteousness of God for spirituality.
 - vi. The mind must be filled with Bible Doctrine and is where you believe or express faith and it is always what you think which counts.
 5. The believer's advance to Spiritual Maturity through persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine
 - i. God cannot impute blessing to the man who rejects the Righteousness of God.

Ps 85:8

v8: With Positive Volition I will concentrate on what the God Jehovah will communicate, for He will communicate prosperity to his people, Israel the client nation, to his, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ's, Mature Gracious believers in the Pivot, but let them not return to a status of foolish weakness of mind or reversionism.

v9: Emphatically, nothing but His, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ's, deliverance is near for those who are occupied with him, that glory may dwell permanently as an advantage in our client nation.

v10: Steadfast love, GRACE or Mercy and Doctrine have met one another together; Righteousness of God imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Prosperity have joined or fused mouth to mouth or kissed each other and belong together.

David #237

Series 631 #237

Ps 85:11-

- I. Functions of the client nation
 - A. Terminology mistranslated
 1. Emeth = Doctrine = absolute truth.
 2. Chesed = Grace or Grace in action or mercy
 - B. Principles:
 1. When the nation is saturated with Bible Doctrine teaching a pivot of mature believers is formed guaranteeing the preservation of the nation no matter the historical situation.
 2. These believers are the Spiritual Maturity believers who are the salt of the land
 3. The Righteousness of God is an asset given us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God which gives us the potential for divine blessing for the believer.

4. Absolute Righteousness looking down from heaven is the potential for divine blessing for the nation.
 5. The Absolute Righteousness imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is the potential for blessing for the believer so Absolute Righteousness looking down from heaven is the potential for blessing for the nation.
 6. The Pivot of mature believers acts as the basis for blessing from God for the nation
 7. The greater the pivot of mature believers the greater the potentiality for blessing to that nation
 8. There can be no pivot without Bible Doctrine teaching in the nation.
 9. Doctrinal teaching springing from the nation results in development of the pivot of mature believers which in turn results in blessing for the nation.
- C. Economic prosperity is a blessing imputed from God to the mature believers in the nation.
1. The size of the pivot is related to the prosperity of the nation.
 2. Just as God imputes personal blessing to Absolute Righteousness in the believer he imputes national blessing to the pivot of mature believers.
 3. The imputation of divine blessing to the nation goes to the pivot and overflows to both believers and unbelievers.
 4. It is because of the pivot that you have national blessing.
 5. It is smart to be humble in business recognizing that the pivot of mature is the reason for prosperity in both believers and unbelievers.
 6. Prosperity is associated with the Grace of God and many rich business men are totally arrogant thinking that they are self made.
 7. The source of all blessing we have in all of life is the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
- D. Personal blessing goes to the individual's Absolute Righteousness imputed to the believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
1. God does not bless us for any reason aside from the fact that he has given us his Absolute Righteousness and it is his own perfection which he can bless.
 2. Imputed Absolute Righteousness and Justification is the potential and motivation for advance to Spiritual Maturity.
 3. Before God can bless the individual he must possess the Righteousness of God
 4. The individual can only possess the Righteousness of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone, Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 5. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God 1/2 of the Integrity of God is imputed to the believer ie the Righteousness of God
 6. The imputation sets up a potential for blessing for the believer and at the same time provides the motivation to keep studying and reach the point of Spiritual Maturity.
 7. The attainment of Spiritual Maturity can only be attained through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 8. The believer is thus motivated to keep on learning Bible Doctrine in spite of all distractions both subjective or objective distractions.
 - i. Subjective distractions are within us as arrogance not wanting to listen to someone teach dogmatically
 - ii. Objective distractions are outside us such as wiggling people or a beautiful woman sitting near, the family is visiting.
 9. Only through persistence in Perception of doctrine can the believer reach Spiritual Maturity and acquire the resultant blessing from God and this Spiritual Maturity alone glorifies God.
- E. Principle:
1. The imputation of divine blessing in time glorifies Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in time.
 - i. Learning doctrine results in blessing which results in glorifying Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
 - ii. What you think is what glorifies the Lord not what you do.

2. This tactical victory demands capacity which the Spiritually Mature believer possesses
3. The target for this blessing is Tsedeq or the Righteousness of God imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
4. The target or home is the motivation for persistence in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine regardless of distraction or discouragement
5. Personal blessing from the Justice of God is imputed to the Spiritually Mature believers resident divine righteousness.
6. National blessing from the Justice of God is imputed to the pivot of mature believers in the nation.
7. Just as personal blessing is imputed to resident divine righteousness of the mature believer national blessing is imputed to collective pivot of mature believers.
8. Thus the pivot of mature believers is a collection of mature believers who possess the imputed Righteousness of God plus the Spiritual Maturity from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
9. Therefore before God can bless there must be divine righteousness as the target of that blessing either in the mature believer or the collection of mature believers known as the pivot.
10. In this line we see imputed Absolute Righteousness not as potentiality but as motivation.
11. The motivation of the believer in advance to Spiritual Maturity must be compatible with the Royal Family Honor Code.
12. There can be no greater motivation than the doctrine of justification as the imputation of the Righteousness of God to us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and this is the primary subject of the book of Romans.
 - i. God justifies us after the imputation of his Absolute Righteousness to us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - ii. God justifies us because he has put a good thing in us not because we have any good thing inherent in us.
13. Imputation must have direction:
 - i. Imputation of blessing to the believer goes to Absolute Righteousness
 - ii. Imputation of national blessing goes to the pivot of mature believers.

F. Principle

1. The believer is motivated by imputation of the Righteousness of God
2. This resident Absolute Righteousness of God is demanding the imputation of blessing from God.
3. Before blessing can be imputed there must be acquired Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for capacity to receive blessing.
 - i. NOTHING we do is the basis for any blessing from God.
4. The reason for blessing is all inside of us.
5. To give blessing without the capacity for blessing from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is to give misery.

G. Principles:

1. The Righteousness of God is motivation for spiritual advance
2. Doctrine is the motivation for advance to Spiritual Maturity as well as the means of attaining it.
3. This verse 13 teaches that the doctrine of imputation is not only the potential but also the motivation and momentum in the Spiritual Life for persistence in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
4. Only maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul or the status of Spiritual Maturity has capacity for imputation of blessing.
5. This imputation glorifies the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
6. The Plan of God excludes arrogance or self righteousness
7. No believer can attain Spiritual Maturity with arrogance in the soul and the self righteous

Modus Operandi

8. This is why some believers fulfill the maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine principle but arrogance keeps them from Spiritual Maturity as they fall into reversionism.
9. The arrogant believer is unteachable and at some point in advance to Spiritual Maturity the arrogant one will resent a subject or presentation of a subject.
 - i. Not if they are interested in a subject or in trouble
 - ii. Arrogant people learn Bible Doctrine until trouble is gone and they then return to their former status.
 - iii. You cannot be eclectic and advance to Spiritual Maturity
10. Being arrogant is being disoriented to authority and unteachable with regard to doctrine.
11. Recognition and submission to authority preserves that humility which is needed to attain Spiritual Maturity.
12. God provides authority for all of us in order that we might learn humility as the basis for advance to Spiritual Maturity.
13. Authority in all areas is designed to maintain humility and therefore teachability.
14. Furthermore Self Righteous Arrogance are signs of immaturity or lack of maturity.
15. God's imputed Absolute Righteousness is the potential, motivation and fulfillment of the objective in time of glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ through maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and imputation of divine blessing at the point of Spiritual Maturity and thereafter.
16. The righteousness and way is the Plan of God of v13 and purpose after salvation.

Ps 85:11-

v11: **Absolute truth of Doctrine will sprout or shine forth from the land as missionaries, and the Absolute Righteousness of God will look down from or be offered from heaven.**

v12: **The LORD also himself will give the good as the Plan of God and blessing for the nation, and our land shall give her increase, wealth in terms of agricultural economy.**

v13: **Righteousness shall go before his, God's, face as motivation, that he, believers with Positive Volition, may put or place his steps as persistent and consistent concentration in learning Bible Doctrine, toward the way to Spiritual Maturity.**

Lesson #606 Series # 458 Romans 9:23- Dynamics for Disaster

- I. Debaters:
 - A. Good debaters must be humble and you cannot be arrogant and be good in debate
 1. If you are arrogant you are inflexible and if inflexible you cannot be a good debater.
 - B. All great debaters must be flexible, rational, logical, related to reality and they can be destroyed simply by arrogance and inflexibility
 1. Smart people who are arrogant and inflexible are always pseudo intellectual.
 2. You cannot ever exploit a good IQ and perceptive ability if you are arrogant and inflexible.
 3. Arrogance is the origin of inflexible.
 4. All arrogant people are inflexible.
 - i. Douglas MacArthur was the most flexible person in military functions ever and he was gracious, thoughtful, considerate and brilliant but never inflexible and not ever arrogant.
 5. You cannot ever type Eisenhower and MacArthur both being humble, flexible and intelligent.
 6. Humility + Brilliance + Flexibility + Moral Courage == Greatness as a man.
 7. The Personality of Eisenhower Hid all of this and most people think he was just sweet and dumb.
 - i. He is one of the most underrated people who ever have walked across this country and has been maligned, ridiculed and many general officers ran him down constantly.

8. You cannot ever exploit a brilliant mind if you have even a touch of arrogance.
 9. In the media and in the education profession many apparently smart people exist but they are pseudo intellectual and smart, arrogant and inflexible.
 10. Smart people with arrogance are always pseudo intellectual and have hang ups and trying to prove something and trying to advance beyond their peers.
 11. The more you push with arrogance the more inflexible you become and in Christianity where your personal IQ is not the issue but your spiritual perspicacity is.
- C. Moses was a genius in Military, engineering, musical, literary, public speaking, and was one of the strongest men who ever lived.
1. He was called arrogant, proud, vain, but was according to God was the most humble man who ever lived.
 2. He was flexible and had great moral courage.
 3. **You cannot have true moral courage and be arrogant and inflexible and in any way vain and self centered.**
 - 4.
- D. Paul as seen in Romans totally was the smartest person ever to live.
- E. **Everyone is a natural coward in some area and courage is the ability to concentrate in pressure situations.**
1. **You cannot apply or use the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul unless you can concentrate under pressure and only with concentration can you apply this Bible Doctrine to disaster, adversity, crisis or catastrophe.**
 2. **You only can learn to concentrate as a believer under strict academic discipline in bible study and Metabolized Bible Doctrine without concentration is doctrine you cannot ever apply.**
 3. **You MUST learn to concentrate.**
 4. **If you are too easily distracted in bible study this means when disaster comes you cannot be counted on and would fail.**
 5. **You can only team up with people who can concentrate under pressure.**
 6. **There is a natural streak of cowardice in every person and the only way to overcome the cowardly streak is through concentration.**
 7. **People in disaster will never make it if they cannot apply what they know and are thus totally divorced from reality**
 8. **Arrogance divorces from reality and produces inflexibility so does the inability to concentrate on subjects which don't apply to you immediately or don't interest you at the time.**
 9. **Some people can make it in a crisis with less doctrine than others because they can concentrate and think under pressure.**
 10. **The secret to courage is to be able to think under pressure or follow a system of protocol.**
 11. **If a person cannot think when things are normal they must have a protocol or regimented system to force them into standard procedures.**
 12. **You learn to shoot under normal conditions so that under crisis conditions you can shoot the exact same way.**
 13. **The person who does not concentrate on each fundamental of shooting on the range under normal conditions cannot do it under abnormal conditions of combat.**
 14. **When you have true sight pictures on the range you will have a true sight picture in combat and bands of fire will not ever work properly in combat.**
 15. **When you fight someone and they are really good you have to concentrate on their hands and feet and watch when each movement takes place if you concentrate on what you learned and apply it you have no fear.**
- F. **Everyone has some area where they would be a coward and it is based on everyone having an**

Old Sin Nature

1. Just like having the Old Sin Nature with different area of sin so that one persons sin is another's Self Righteousness.
 2. Everyone has some are where they are afraid and there is nothing wrong with that but what is wrong is BECOMING EMOTIONAL WHEN FEAR IS AN ISSUE.
 3. You must be rational not emotional
 4. The only way to be rational is to have the ability to concentrate and apply whatever you have learned.
 5. Another way is to be able to go through set of protocol procedures like the British military or people in the Indian Mutiny.
 6. You have a chance to practice courage every day by concentration of Bible Doctrine.
- G. You only learn by concentration
1. When you want to learn something you concentrate on it but the real test on concentration is when you have to learn something you don't want to learn.
 2. Having to learn things you don't want to learn is what is so very important in your behavior and thought patterns and function in disaster.
 3. This is why the military finally discovered close order drill and it is the greatest protocol system for instinctive obedience and concentration on what you are doing rather than what the enemy was doing.
 4. To concentrate on what the enemy is doing shooting at you results in fear, to concentrate on what you are doing shooting at them is courage.
 5. Courage concentrate on what you are doing to them, FEAR concentrate on what they are doing to you.
- H. **God previously in Eternity Past knew every thought decision and action we would ever make and entered this into then Divine Decree**
1. Having entered this in he also entered Logistical Grace support for each of our decisions.
 2. "Underneath are the everlasting arms"
 3. When people are frightened they call on God and they think this is legitimate prayer.
 4. Instead of concentrating on Metabolized Bible Doctrine from their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul they call on God with emotion instead of being rational.
 5. Because they are irrational in screaming to God for help they cannot apply a very simple principle that every need that you have ever had or will have including any historical or national disaster which will come was supplied in Eternity Past; this is Logistical Grace
 6. The logistics were worked out in Eternity Past.
- I. **In Eternity Past before man existed the omniscience of God knew every fact about every detail of your life**
1. **Whether he would advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and concentrate on Bible Doctrine in study or not or be distracted.**
 2. **Drop outs from Bible Doctrine don't take the course so they don't learn what is in the course and don't matriculate and most believers today are drop outs.**
 3. **The ones who get into the course to pass the course they all flunk the course and that is how they pass the course.**
 4. **You learn by flunking (failing) and this learning is what allows you to pass the course.**
 5. **God in Eternity Past provided for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God when he was in X, Y and also Z radical of the Equation of Hope.**
- J. **God fed into the decree Positive Volition and Negative Volition**
1. **Positive Volition was for glory for those who advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.**

2. Negative Volition was for destruction for those who rejected Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
3. Drop outs don't lose their salvation but they simply don't continue on to glory.
4. They don't receive the imputation of blessing in time they being in reversionism and God forms them into a cadre of believers to act as aggressors to distract or attempt to distract believers who are under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine.
5. We have today an incredibly large cadre of believers to distract advancing believer from Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
6. Vessels of mercy are the only believers qualified for and have potential for glory and this is the one who is consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
7. Riches of glory includes the blessing in time from the Justice of God to the Righteousness of God in us and this sets up the afortiori for blessing in eternity.
8. We must use our volition under freedom and free will and to function properly we must have privacy, property and umbrella of authority
9. The umbrella of authority in the spiritual realm is where you get your concentration.
10. Equality is a satanic system of propaganda and freedom is the real issue.
11. Freedom creates inequalities and one person uses it to advance and another to be a bum.
12. Equality is a myth and there never was and never will be equality on earth nor in heaven.
13. The believer under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine is free to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receive great blessing and reward.
14. The believer under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine is under Divine Discipline all his life and lives often a long life since God can only give him Divine Discipline in time and once he dies no more sorrow, tears, pain or death the old things have passed.
15. This is why the good die young and the mean live on and on.
16. God uses these people for a cadre of distracters and aggressors and also keeping them alive for years of warning, intensive Divine Discipline and then a horrible nightmarish death under the Sin Unto Death.
17. Then after their death they end up in heaven with the Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and Human Good and MINUS the imputation of blessing and reward.
18. ***The only believers who glorify God in time and eternity are those who receive the imputation of blessing in time will receive it in eternity.***
19. ***You can work your head off in life doing all the legitimate or illegitimate things for God in life and it makes no difference and you don't glorify God in any way and you are improving your arrogance and Self Righteousness.***
20. ***Arrogance is the origin of inflexibility and of Self Righteousness and cowardice and pseudo intellectuality.***

K. Blessing in time is part of the "glory of God" and it is parlayed afortiori into the eternal rewards and blessing for the Resurrection Body after the rapture and great genuflex at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

L. Principle:

1. While God has provided many wonderful things for the believer as vessels of mercy the unbeliever as vessels of wrath has created his own miserable destiny from rejection of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ from his own Negative Volition
2. This protasis without an apodasis in Aposiopisis emphasizes that being physical seed of Abraham merely qualifies the Jew to be a vessel of wrath.
 - i. Paul has made a great advance
 - ii. He has prior to this demonstrated his great concern and compassion for the Jew who rejects Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the God of Israel the shekinah glory.
 - iii. He is now showing these Jews something else by showing that when they reject Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ they mold their own destruction.
3. On the other hand the Jew who believes in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ becomes a

- vessel of mercy previously prepared for glory.
4. The contrast between destruction and glory summarizes the burden which Paul carries for the Jew in stead of depending on Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God his contemporary Jewish friends were depending on keeping the law plus the fact that they were physically related to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.
 - i. You can be nice to people and they will run all over you and you can be compassionate and sweet and they will rip you to pieces.
 - ii. But the person who does not respond to compassion you can handle him by ripping him apart and putting him back together and after about 4 times he will actually listen.
 - iii. Paul has stated his compassion and this did not impress these Jews at all
 - iv. You rip these smart Jews apart by tearing him up with words in debate and use rhetorical questions and finesse and use these complicated techniques and when you do this he cannot respond but must consider what is said and are thus impressed.
 - v. We can be impressed with is compassion and love but they were not but they are impressed by his mentality and genius.
 - vi. It takes a smart person to know a smarter one.
 5. Therefore the Jew without Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ becomes a vessel of wrath prepared for destruction by his own Negative Volition
 - i. The analogy to this Jew is that he is just like that evil gentile Amenhotep II in the time of the exodus one who all Jews know.
 6. In Eternity Past God prepared the riches of glory in divine blessing for believers like Abraham the father of the Jewish race, Moses the father of the Jewish nation and Paul the supreme genius of history and the greatest mentality which has ever lived.
 - i. God prepared the glory for these men who believed in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and be thus qualified for such blessings by imputation of the Absolute Righteousness of God and Eternal Life.
 7. There is no divine blessing for the Jew who rejects Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as savior for he like Amenhotep II is a vessel of wrath prepared for destruction by his own Negative Volition self determination and free will.
 8. God originated the Jewish race for his glory but racial Jews had missed the divine purpose by rejection of the shekinah glory Adanai Elohim the God of Israel, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

Rom 9:23-

v23: **And he, God, did so in order that he, God, might totally lucidly reveal and make known through our perception and inculcation, in order to give another chance for possessing Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, the unique true wealth and true riches of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, which belong to him and are his glory, on vessels of mercy or grace in action through imputation of blessing in time to believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, which vessels he has previously prepared or appointed before hand or ahead of time for Glory.**

Lesson #607 Series # 458 Matt 8:18- Dynamics for Disaster

- I. Handling Disaster:
 - A. The difference between cowardice and courage is being able to concentrate and use words, thoughts and principles in the soul and Emotional Revolt of the Soul.
 1. A real hero thinks and shoots one at a time picking his target and who handles the abnormal circumstances of combat just as he does on the range.
 2. He knows how to concentrate on trigger control and sight picture and complete self discipline and thought patterns and concentration needed.
 3. Truly great heroes are those who have the ability to coldly beautifully with good Mental Attitude kill and handle their weapons during combat and do their job.
 4. The best killers in combat are those who are believers who have the ability to concentrate

and think under pressure and who do not get emotional during combat.

5. Most cowardice is related to stupidity and emotion and this is why the cultists and holy rollers and in such bad shape and fall apart in normal times and don't wait for abnormal circumstances to become psycho.

B. Historical crisis in the United States of America started when Carter recognized Peking and China as a nation.

1. This means war and economic disaster and historical crisis.
2. We have had opportunity to prepare for historical crisis by personal crisis and these are often related closely
3. Our ability to life and capacity for life and love and handle suffering while people may be compassionate in your suffering you must handle it alone.
4. The best test of life is dying and this as part of living means if you live well you will die well.
5. The most valuable thing we have in life is the content of our soul and ability to think.
6. The recognition of China as a nation was total divorcement from reality and in the first year of the communist take over saw 20,000,000 anti communists were executed.
7. We at that time agreed that that was a good thing and as during Franklin Roosevelt who turned over 1/3 of the population of the earth to communist slavery and death worse than death.
8. We said that we recognize international gangsters even though we put a few small criminals behind bars and execute a few and are saying we agree with the policies of this nation china
9. This is exactly what Israel said when Sennacherib and his tough cruel army came to Judah where their army had fallen apart like ours had and now has again and prophets were preaching Peace and Peace and the state department went to Egypt for help and then Isaiah preached his message of Woe to those who got to Egypt.
10. When the Egyptians came up to deliver Judah from Sennacherib and how these 2 great armies of Egypt were clobbered and driven back and then there was nothing and no one left to depend on.
11. The deliverance came from a small handful of professional soldiers and demonstrated again all freedom comes from military victory and courtesy of men who fight and die on battlefields.
12. We at the time of this message have the development of a greater and greater crisis and we fought in Korea against them and should have won then.
13. Douglas MacArthur was hindered in Korea and limited and finally pushed out of the scene and he could have destroyed that Chinese army and given them some real respect for us.
14. You never develop respect by being pusillanimous and cow towing by buying off countries as in the marshal plan but only by whipping them and being so tough they would not dare attack you and this is why Rome had peace for 100 years when everyone was afraid of the Romans and then they declined and when the barbarians moved into the area of the roman empire they had declined.
15. There was a decline in clear lucid thinking and in the military it is just a matter of how it will happen.
16. Are the FAGS going to take control of government or have Bureaucrats who finally put us on the reservation or an all out attack and both Russia and China are prepared for just this thing.
17. We are using a toy for a weapon in war no better than the M1 Carbine the M16 and its derivatives not designed to take out enemies at 500 or 1000
18. We have since this time have lost out in every way and navy and army have been used from this time for experimentation in sociology and we are NOW in the middle of historical crisis and we were the last hope of western European civilization and when we

- fall there will be a new dark ages and medieval history will be back.
19. Most will not make it and not because they have not stockpiled ammunition and food or a place to hide but because we don't have the ability to take principles of Bible Doctrine and through concentration make application.
 20. This is inflexibility with regard to NON essentials and flexibility with regard to the essentials of Bible Doctrine and this must be reversed.
 21. We must have inflexibility with regard to essentials of Bible Doctrine for proper various applications and flexibility with regard to non essentials as per the Royal Family Honor Code.
 22. At the time of this message we were withdrawing support and protection from an honorable nation Taiwan.
 23. The communists have a dozen ways to destroy us and the simple one is that we need chrome for jet engines and many other applications and we have since then turned Rhodesia over to terrorists and evil men and as a result we must purchase our chrome from Russia and when we get Rhodesian chrome we pay double buying it from Russia.
 24. Rhodesia was the last nation in the world with Anglo Saxon culture and when this is gone as we have seen in our history our principle of freedom from the Shire Mut is almost totally gone.
 25. Freedom is not equality as we have called it since the 70's and this is idiotic.
 26. Freedom and Equality are totally antithetical and freedom motivates one man to advance and others to sit on park benches and become a rock music idiot and dope head etc.
 27. Our attitude toward Bible Doctrine results in heaven seeing some believers with great rewards and some just being there.
 28. Equality destroys freedom and they are mutually exclusive and cannot coexist and equality is a Marxist system of conquest and a propaganda system.
 29. The arrogant always buy this system because no matter how high your IQ if you are arrogant you are stupid and always buy this equality which in fact means tyranny.
 30. Freedom is invented by God and ordained by him in order to give self determination to resolve the Angelic Conflict.
 31. Freedom means privacy and every attack of big government on privacy means attack on freedom and we have a total right to our privacy and when they attack our privacy they are attacking freedom.
 32. If a criminal enters your home this attacks privacy and you should be free to shoot him as he stands and this is what controls crime.
 33. Property is an essential part of freedom and the greatest incentives in a free enterprise system is to see people with fancy cars and big ranches and living ostentatiously and having things associated with prosperity and success and we should think HoooRaaahhh.
 34. This is incentive to others to build up a business and gain prosperity and this shows that free enterprise ordained of God is the greatest system ever known in the world and the average American lived (no longer) than kings of past.
 35. The people in Russia and china are mixtures of all kinds of people who are sheep to a Marxist system.
 36. At the time of this writing the Russians had 200 divisions in the military and we had only 10 and we were using principles of business applied to military and the whole system of professionalism for officers was destroyed by the evil of socialism.

Prov 23:7

v7: for as a man thinks in his soul so he is. He says to you "Eat and drink!"; but his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is not with you but in fact against you.

- C. You are what you think as an individual with capacity for thought and your possession of a soul is the real key.
 1. The real part of each of us is our soul with our self consciousness, and Right Lobe of the

Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Left Lobe and memory center and Norms and Standards and volition and emotion designed to respond to what is in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but never to rule the soul.

2. Beginning at this time of our history EMOTION rules the souls of the people of the United States of America and this is conditioning for conquest by outside powers.
3. The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the male part of the soul and the emotion is the female and the emotion must never take charge.
4. When this happens we are through.
5. The state department degraded the army and 82nd airborne when they sent them down to get dead people out of the Jones cult thing in Ghiana instead of just doing a mass burial for these idiots.
6. Beginning at the end of World War II it started to become obvious that manifest destiny has become degeneration and this is our crisis beginning and degeneration of thought.
7. Since World War II we have been declining in thought as individuals and as a nation and from the zuit suiters to the hippie bums to gangs today and the liberal divorced from reality wants peace when there cannot be peace and we have lost perspective as a nation and our priorities as individuals
8. We have allowed our nation integrity and freedom to be compromised by permitting the rearmament of Russian communism and while our thinking has become so bad we had in the 1970s become a second class power.
9. Historical reality is we are no longer in 2015 anywhere close to being a world power and no where near being an economic power.
10. All freedom until the 2nd advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ will be brought through military victory we are in very very bad position today.

D. Freedom is an invention of God and principle of Bible Doctrine.

1. It must have privacy and we must be free for self determination
2. This is why our soul is invisible
3. It is essential that we must have property and the government has no right ever to intrude on our property in any way and if we want to kill ourselves by driving junk without brakes we have a right to do that.
4. There has been an attack on police since this time by the law abiding citizen who is the first to call police when there is trouble.
5. We are in 2015 seeing a fulfillment of this principle that we are on our own having destroyed Law Enforcement by bleeding hearts for criminals and we have been encouraged over and over again to take the steps needed to protect and defend ourselves in what ever way we can by Law Enforcement personnel and leaders as we are in fear of criminal gangs and terrorists on our own streets.
6. This started by calling police fuzz and allowing scum to spit in the faces of police and we don't hear enough that people kill criminals when they attack.
7. In addition they have tried over and over again and today the President idiot is going to sign an executive order to confiscate guns and this is an invasion of freedom by taking away personal property.
8. Over all this is authority as we have studied in the past and we have distorted all the authority situations by putting authority in those who should not have it such as labor, students and enlisted men.
9. Big government little people and liberalism produces arrogance and arrogance assumes the prerogatives of God and destroys freedom with a ploy called equality.
10. WE see this in our income tax system which is immoral when is should be 10% across the board which give incentive for the Laws of Divine Establishment and free enterprise.
11. Our government is infected by the insanity of Marxist socialism welfare state functions and destruction of self determination and OSHA which destroys everything it touches and EPA as well.

12. Our government is immoral and it is illegal to do most of the things they have done since the 1970's
13. If you have a gas field or oil field you can sell it for any price you want and they cannot legally regulate it.
14. There should be incentives to look for other fuel or other energy sources and we should have thousands of atomic plants and foundries but these are not compatible with HEW regulation.
15. Having guns is part of your right to defend yourself but more than that it is essential for keeping the government in check and they have no legal right to regulate that either.
16. If you are for ANY TYPE OF GUN CONTROL such as we already have you are for tyranny.

E. Principle of the Imperative of distraction:

1. Thousands followed Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ here and he came to the edge of a lake and the Jordan flows in from the north and out from the south.
2. It is 14mi long and 8mi wide and is surrounded by mountains on all sides and is subject to heavy storms.
3. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ had no control over these people who followed him and they were a mob of about 30,000 people.
4. They are looking to him as the one to help them with personal and national problems
5. They are having trouble with SPQR though Rome is protecting him from the Persians they want out from under Rome.
6. You cannot do anything with a mob thus you must separate the men who can think from those in the mob who cannot ever think.

F. NOW the first word of v18 is a conjunctive particle which relates past historical situations with the present and even links it to future functions such as:

1. This represents a lot of historical information:
 - i. How people become great as a nation
 - ii. How they follow Laws of Divine Establishment free enterprise
 - iii. How as long as there is little government there is big people and this is good.
 - iv. When there is big government there is little people always.
 - v. Type of government is irrelevant except for democracy which is anarchy and a mob with a slight veneer and it never works.
 - vi. Democracy is what the United States of America has become and we are today a SOCIALIST DEMOCRACY no longer a republic.
 - vii. Democracy is anarchy with a veneer.
2. This sees the situation that some people know there is trouble and realize that the nation is on the verge of destruction.
 - i. Under Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controlling Human History 40 years after this the nation of Israel would be destroyed by the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline and at times in Human History the cancer of idiocy must be removed to preserve the Human Race.
3. Review the Plan of God equation of hope and its imputations and potentials and required Bible Doctrine.
 - i. When God imputes life to us at physical birth this means that God had a plan for our life.
 - ii. God's plan includes:
 - a. Eternal Life
 - b. Dying grace
 - c. Living grace
 - d. Capacity for life and love and happiness etc.
 - e. Ability to be promoted and handle any exigency of life
 - f. Ability to concentrate the think and use freedom in a manner which moves

it into a system of momentum which makes life meaningful.

- i) The person who has no meaning or purpose or definition to life it is meaningless.
 - ii) This is where tragedy and disaster starts.
 - iii) When you have a life of meaning and purpose and definition social life is fun and every part of life is fun.
- iii. Sustaining of the life and function of every human being in X radical is part of the Logistical Grace and occurs by the Laws of Divine Establishment, police, military, small government, laws properly enforced, etc.
 - iv. In the Y Radical this is only for believers
 - a. Blessing in time for the believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in 6 categories
 - i) Spiritual
 - ii) Temporal
 - a) Promotions
 - b) Success
 - c) Wealth
 - d) Happiness
 - e) Leadership
 - f) Being able to handle any circumstance in life so circumstance does not determine your happiness or sadness.
 - iii) Blessing by association
 - iv) Historical Impact
 - v) Ability to handle Undeserved Suffering and historical disaster.
 - vi) Dying grace Blessing
 - a) Having confidence as you die knowing where you are going.
 - v. In the Z Radical as we receive Blessing in time we recognize that we will have blessing in eternity forever.
 4. This is supported by the Laws of Divine Establishment and Royal Family Honor Code.
 - i. The privacy and freedom and property of the individual is recognized and authority is an issue for defense of freedom rather than its destruction under tyranny.
 5. Review the Integrity of God
 - i. The Justice of God as its function
 - ii. The Righteousness of God as its principle
 - iii. The interaction of the Righteousness of God with the Justice of God.
 6. Review the reason we have imputed Absolute Righteousness at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- G. The people of this country are looking without seeing or thinking thus to be NOT alert.
1. WE need to look with alertness and thought and associate what you see with what is in your mind.
 2. If needed we must also associate what we see with your physical reflexes.
 3. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as God and man looked at the crowd and analyzed them knowing them for what they are.
 4. He understood these people were a mob and there was no discipline system in force.
 5. There must be a separation of those who can be prepared for a crisis from those who cannot ever make it.
 6. The crowd gathered here because of approbation.
 7. This was a time just before historical disaster to the kingdom of Judah and there were personal problems in the crowd and national problems as well.

H. What is a crowd:

1. It is made up of people who are emotional fickle and irrational.
 - i. With emotion there is not thought content no common sense and no doctrine.
 - ii. There is no thinking ability nor vocabulary in the emotion of the soul.
 - iii. This is why a mob has to be impressed to be controlled.
 - iv. This was the time in our history in the United States of America of our fomenting the deposing of the Shah of Iran.
 - v. Whenever there is a mob it is an irrational group and there is only way to impress the mob is to follow Napoleon and not try to appease them or stop them but simply KILL them as much as possible to stop them.
 - vi. MOBS are IRRATIONAL.
2. Approbation from the masses becomes a distraction to Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and thus the breeding ground for arrogance.
 - i. The disciples of this mob are potentially teachable and will be the men for the crisis and will learn how to handle the crisis but they must be separated to show them how they must function.
 - ii. The church is designed to take you out of the run of society and separate you for a short time to learn Bible Doctrine and put you under academic discipline as a student without portfolio to enable you to respond with accepting or rejection of that which is taught.
 - iii. You must be in disciplined circumstances to hear it with a system of academic discipline.
 - iv. A BOOing crowd are always fickle, irrational and unstable and even though they may have a high IQ as individuals as they participate in booing they demonstrate lack of exploitation of their perceptive abilities.
3. Those who depend on a crowd for approbation have no capacity for life.
 - i. This is why the lowest order of people in the world are people who are actors or actresses or singers as entertainers.
 - ii. There is no reason to listen to any quotations from any actors or actresses since they live totally in a make believe world.
 - iii. When you pay money and watch or listen to them the applause is all they should get from you.
 - iv. These people are talented and beautiful but very very superficial and they are the lowest people in the society.
 - v. People today listen to these actors and ape them and dress like them and copy these superficial people.
 - vi. Their opinions are for the majority are the most meaningless thoughts in the world and they should never be quoted in the media ever.
4. Approbation when taken from the crowd when taken seriously destroys moral courage and distracts from Bible Doctrine and guarantees a life of misery under Divine Discipline.
 - i. Those who depend on a crowd for approbation have no capacity for life and lose their honor and integrity and end with a distorted scale of values.
5. Since a crowd is irrational emotional and incapable of thought it will always fall apart in disaster.
 - i. As soon as there is any pressure on any crowd or mob they always panic.
 - ii. Mobs are incapable of thought, moral courage or discernment
6. The mob destroys human freedom by demanding equality intruding into privacy destroying property.
 - i. We see this when there are riots and people break store windows and steal things and they are allowed to do this and police often stand around and watch them when they should be challenged and shot on sight.

- ii. The property must be made safe as someone has worked hard for it
- iii. When we allow these scum to take freely property of others and they are not challenged we have lost freedom to evangelize and teach Bible Doctrine and move through life in any way they want to.
- iv. If they don't have the things they are stealing let them work hard to gain these things.
- v. Theft is a destruction of freedom totally.
- 7. Therefore a mob becomes an evil instrument easily succumbing to rumor or propaganda victimized by any demagog who promises them the millennium
 - i. A mob is a weapon and there is always someone who can find the trigger for a mob and start them on a rampage.
- 8. Freedom is lost in a crowd or mob and everyone who is a part of a crowd or mob is a slave.
 - i. We as members of the Royal Family of God should never be in any kind of demonstration or mob as this is the most stupid imbecilic thing and totally irrational and making self a tool in the hands of those who would destroy freedom and you surrender your freedom in any mob.
- 9. The mob is a distraction to Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. Many in this mob are believers in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ but they are now being distracted not being in any organized situation but in the mob they are distracted and must be separated from the mob before they can matriculate in the course of "Dynamics for Disaster".
- 10. Thus the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ must separate those with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine from the mob.
 - i. Separation from the mob is needed to establish the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ for the purpose of academic discipline and incultation of the dynamics for disaster.
 - ii. All believers who advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God must be separated from the mob and its evil influences
 - iii. The most precious thing we have is our thought and our freedom to think and express thought and accept or reject thoughts communicated to you.
 - iv. Our greatest decision is what do we think of Bible Doctrine
 - v. When we have Negative Volition we enter warning, intensive and dying Divine Discipline eventually.
 - vi. Always sincere believers who become antagonistic to Bible Doctrine are part of the aggressors of the Spiritual Life.
- I. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ must separate the believers with Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and spiritual growth from the mob
 - 1. He will give a command and thus establish his authority.
 - 2. Many will drop out:
 - i. The pseudo intellectual always is a believer with Scar Tissue of the Soul and the greater the Scar Tissue of the Soul the greater the arrogance building up and the more arrogance there is in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the more he is impressed with his own thoughts and thus is unteachable.
 - ii. He has a better way and something he wants to do and they are unteachable pseudo intellectual with a high IQ and cannot put their thoughts together to think in terms of principle
 - iii. These are susceptible to false concepts of welfare and socialism and want government regulation of individual lives
 - iv. College professors fall into this category and have incredible arrogance which makes them pseudo intellectuals

- v. Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul resists truth thus they can perceive an outer layer of academic substance but there is no inner truth.
 - vi. The pseudo intellectual cannot ever stand up to historical crisis.
 - vii. they have no common sense and no concentration.
 - viii. Concentration that it takes for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and take gnosis and convert it to epignosis Bible Doctrine is the same system for application of that doctrine to situations of life.
 - ix. If you cannot concentrate in learning you cannot ever apply what you have learned.
 - x. In the same way you learn is the same way you apply to situations and perception and application works on the same system in reverse.
 - xi. The difference between courage and cowardice is the ability to concentrate for application of what you know.
3. Those who obey the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ will also obey his delegated authority in Bible Doctrine
 - i. You cannot learn Bible Doctrine as part of a mob such as holy rollers, or sharing or imbecility of telling strangers you love them.
 4. Authority is the first key to anything and to freedom and perception and handling crises and being a good lover
 - i. Authority + Concentration where Bible Doctrine is involved is capacity for life.
 5. We must step away from daily mob activities and move under the authority of our Pastor Teacher and ignore anything which irritates us and anyone who offends us and simply TAKE IN Bible Doctrine consistently.
 - i. The authority of the Pastor Teacher will in fact protect the congregation from anyone who invades the privacy of any one of the congregation.
 - ii. The Pastor Teacher is there to keep us honed fine with the real issue of Bible Doctrine.
 - iii. The first issue is what do you think of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and the second is Bible Doctrine.
 - iv. Much of the authority in any organization and especially in a church is delegated.

Lesson #608 Series # 458 Matt 8:18- Dynamics for Disaster

- I. Mob Principles applications Continued:
 - A. the Local Church takes the believer out of the mob and places him under the environment of authority and Laws of Divine Establishment to guarantee his privacy and opportunity to learn Bible Doctrine to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 1. This separated you from the mob and there is no place in any Local Church for any mob actions such as speaking in tongues etc.
 - B. The only way to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine thus there can be no perception of Bible Doctrine until one separates from the lawlessness, emotionalism, instability and irrationality of the crowd.
 1. Everything in a mob is a distraction to the very purpose for which we live in this life ie Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 2. This includes the lawlessness and every aspect of its influence of the mob and no one ever can learn Bible Doctrine on his own but ONLY in a congregation where the people are under a system of authority.
 3. The congregation meets in a Local Church which is an indefinite number of believers gathered under a Pastor Teacher
 4. There must never ever be in any congregation any mob scenes or actions.
 5. This is how your privacy and volition and self determination are protected so that we as the lump of clay through our own volition function will determine whether we advance or

not in the Spiritual Life.

- C. It is vital that we learn to rightly divide the word of truth and distinguish between any mob and any group of people under discipline or Laws of Divine Establishment
- D. While the mob is anti Christ the congregation in the Local Church are pro Christ and under the delegated authority of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
 1. To the Pastor Teacher and Doctrine and administration of the Local Church.
 2. This explains the meaning of the verse “let everything be done decently and in order”.
 3. One of the closest calls any congregation can have in a congregational meeting where every jackass with some arrogance thinks he must get up and express self.
 4. This occurs often in the baptist churches
 5. Things must always be handled in an orderly way and never get out of hand and no debate about things and no accusation nor counter accusation.
 6. We must recognize in any group especially the Local Church that the guidelines and systems of authority are recognized such as the refinement of Anglo Saxon culture seen in Robert’s Rules of Order to keep meetings in line.
 7. This is how scum rabble rousing the people in a congregation.
 8. We have seen this since the 1950’s on in the United States of America mobs, scum, rabble, irrational unstable, emotional, stupid imbecilic accomplishing absolutely NOTHING but putting this nation in a very bad position.
 9. Any person in office who is influenced by a mob or permits any demonstration to influence his thinking should not be in the office and he too is stupid and a coward.
 10. Some of the greatest acts of cowardice have occurred from politicians who dignified mobs by listening to their demands.
 11. Like violence mob action never settles anything but intensifies the problem and adds confusion to confusion.
- E. The gift of evangelism is different from individual witnessing to individual people.
 1. Every one is commanded to function under personal evangelism
 2. Evangelism is designed to function outside the Local Church and give the believer who has the gift of an evangelist a hearing in front of a MOB.
 3. The mob has no authority nor discipline nor common sense and an evangelist such as Billy Graham has this ability.
 4. No matter how inaccurate an evangelist is in doctrinal content he can get the attention of a mob group.
 5. It functions outside the Local Church always and people never are invited into the Local Church to hear an evangelist.
 6. This does not mean that people are not to be evangelized in the Local Church.
 7. No believer witnessing nor any Pastor Teacher is ever as effective in front of a mob of unbelievers as the evangelist.
 8. In every generation the Spiritual gift is distributed and some will have the attention of a very large group or small group depending on the size of the Positive Volition at God Consciousness.
 9. The size of the crowd is not the issue, the issue is in the size of the crowd is the Positive Volition at God Consciousness in that location.
 10. All believers at some time or another become crowd conscious and impressed by numbers.
 11. The evangelist operates outside the Local Church on neutral ground and the spiritual gift includes not necessarily accuracy in doctrine which depends only on his personal study but this spiritual gift will gain the attention of a mob of unbeliever.
 12. When people go to an evangelist meeting it is a mob and there is NO discipline nor order.
 13. When the evangelist stands to speak the crowd is quiet and listens to what he has to say.
 14. In the time of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ there was the Sekari who rivaled the Thugs of India as a terrorist group.

15. It is imperative to never criticize an evangelist and we must remain silent about evangelists and they are only responsible to the Lord.
 16. This gift is designed to get a hearing in a mob so that the individuals will concentrate on the presentation of the gospel and through the ministry of God the Holy Spirit understand the issue.
- F. For spiritual growth and glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ it is essential to separate believers from the mob so that they can concentrate on the teaching of Bible Doctrine without distraction.
1. It is impossible to teach Bible Doctrine to the mob who has no Frame of Reference with regard to spiritual things.
- G. The mob is anti authority and unstable while the assembly in the Local Church is amenable to the authority of the communicator thus objective.
1. Mobs are subjective, irrational, easily set off in the wrong direction, unruly, and often turns into rabble at the drop of a single word.
 2. Alexander Solzhenitsyn got the group at Harvard to HISS at him when speaking against peaceniks, this is a mob.
- H. It becomes necessary for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ to carefully estimate the situation in this passage by his observation and separate the believers under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine from Negative Volition believers and unbelievers.
1. This is essential for inculcation of Bible Doctrine.
 2. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ saw the mob around him first and evaluated the mob and then gave a command to move to another location.
 3. This command structure gives the one's who are under Negative Volition a chance to back out without embarrassment.
 4. The Lord was not trying to shame anyone and use of a simple command which was simple so any jackass who was under Positive Volition could obey it.
 5. When you make a challenge which shames someone into going along with you, you have failed in your challenge.
 6. People who do things because they are shamed by the speaker or leader are unstable.
 7. The person who shames others into doing things they want are WRONG.
 8. Privacy is needed for decision and decisions must come from the individual because each of us will be held responsible for our decisions but not anyone else's.
 9. Shaming people into actions is abuse of authority and develops subjectivity so that people make decisions which they should not make.
 10. This is often how idiotic people get onto the mission fields and once they made these decisions to get on the mission field they could not back out.
 11. To get involved in missionary function a believer has to be very special and one of the best with regard to Bible Doctrine and the gospel.
 12. When people force decisions they almost never turn out right.
- I. By getting those with Positive Volition on a ship to cross the sea they are isolated and under his authority and away from the mob.
1. You must break away from the mob and cannot have bible class in any mob.
 2. This command separated Positive Volition from Negative Volition and also from the dropouts who have excuses.
 3. This lake is located in the Jordan rift 700 feet below sea level and it is only 130 feet deep and subject to very bad storms which come up very rapidly and without any way to predict the storms.
- J. This command causes a crisis to develop which demands a decision by individuals forcing people from their own free will and privacy of their souls to decide about matriculation in the course of disaster dynamics.
1. Many will be casualties long before any disaster can occur and these people are believers and under Positive Volition but inconsistent in their focus and are not consistent enough

- to separate from the mob and join those who will learn doctrine about disaster.
- 2. This command of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ resulted in a real test for many believers.
- 3. Matt 8:18-23 + Luke 9:60-62 shows us 2 categories of believers who are too weak to advance in the Christian Way of Life or fulfill the Plan of God or to endure any real historical crisis.
- 4. These will have no capacity for life or happiness or blessing nor for dying.
- 5. These categories represent too many people today.

II. The case of the first distracted disciple:

A. This is one case history of a whole category of distracted people.

B. Authority:

- 1. It is a legal power delegated by God under the Laws of Divine Establishment and as a result of this certain members of the Human Race have jurisdiction over and **responsibility for others** in the Human Race.
 - i. Parents
 - ii. Husbands
 - a. They have total jurisdiction over the wife in and out of the Local Church.
 - iii. Officers in military function over those under his authority and is responsible for everything they do and must discipline the weak and make sure they function properly.
 - a. Eisenhower took responsibility always for those under him when they failed.
 - b. This is a mature person.
- 2. It is needed for the function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and is for both believer and unbeliever.
 - i. This is coach over team and why they get fired.
 - ii. When you leave a position you should never complain about leaving if you understand authority.
- 3. There are Laws of Divine Establishment relating to nature ie scientific laws and in the Local Church the Pastor Teacher is authority over the congregation (Heb 13:7-17) but we must remember that the Pastor Teacher is responsible for us his congregation even at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
- 4. In business authority stabilizes the economy and Management ONLY has authority NEVER labor and with stock holders in that type of business
 - i. There is never any authority in labor never has been nor will be despite it being set up in labor unions and this is disastrous.
 - ii. Many companies even in the 70's have moved out of the United States to get into a labor market which they can deal with.
 - iii. A great disaster which came to our country is the Closed Shop system of union members only.
- 5. While believers under Positive Volition advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception the believer cannot maintain motivation or continue his momentum apart from some authority orientation.
 - i. Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is the only means of spiritual advance and such perception demands some authority orientation.
 - ii. Freedom is never isolated and is an interrelationship of concepts forming a single principle including
 - a. Freedom ie self determination from use of personal volition.
 - b. Privacy as a principle related to proper use of volition without outside corrupting influence.
 - c. Property as a principle related to the Laws of Divine Establishment which establishes motivation

- iii. Socialism destroys free enterprise motivation by confiscating property and over taxing property by abusing the principle of property and our federal government is one of the greatest thieves in the world today and should be indicted for stealing.
 - a. This is a great evil
 - b. Our government is involved in huge confiscation of property.
- iv. Authority is the umbrella which is designed to protect all the concepts of freedom.
 - a. There cannot be an attack on any concepts of freedom without destroying the entire principle and an attack on property such as socialism and welfare destroys freedom.
 - b. Slavery or gossip attacks or destroys privacy and thus destroys freedom.
 - c. Freedom is lost through demonism and possession of the unbeliever and drug addiction which is one of the greatest destruction of freedom today and the greatest slavery today.
 - d. This is permanently damaging to the brain and destroys the possibility of people advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - e. This is one of our greatest attacks on freedom and despite it being idiotic in giving away the panama canal the president of this region is the head of the drug syndicate and one of the greatest means of getting drugs into the United States of America in the past.

C. The ONE scribe:

1. This ONE describes a whole category of people who cannot ever live through a crisis nor handle any historical disaster.
2. This one person is a pseudo intellectual who is a person whose arrogance of soul is greater than his knowledge in any field he is involved in.
3. His arrogance forms a wall around a possibility of ever getting to real truth.
4. He know about a subject and others and may be an expert in one of more but really never gets into absolute truth despite being an expert in another field.
5. This is superficial and tries to reconcile his field with Bible Doctrine such as philosophy or evolution.
6. He is smart with a high IQ but no foundation of Bible Doctrine or truth and all his knowledge no matter how great has no roots in Bible Doctrine.
7. No matter the area he as great knowledge in nor his level of intelligence but has no roots in Bible Doctrine.
8. Thus he represents the pseudo intellectual we see in our time and most college professors fit this area today.
9. They are arrogant and inflexible and Knowledge and expertise in one subject allows their arrogance to assume they are expert about anything in life.
10. They have an “arrogant hangup” which distorts any Bible Doctrine they hear into rationalism or empiricism.
11. This type of man has a very high IQ and has all the credentials and is attracted to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ because of his intellect and ability to debate with others.

D. Pseudo intellectuals are invariably liberals

1. Beneath the veneer of intellectualism is emotional distraction.
2. This is why the liberal is always trying to do good somewhere and why they are bleeding hearts.
3. This is how they create a vacuum in their soul into which socialism and Marxism is sucked and why Marshal field and Henry Wallace and why we see it in government and business and college classes there are so many socialists and welfare state supporters and go gooders.
4. In south American countries the college campuses are places which foment revolution as seen in California during the Vietnam war with mad hippies running all over the campuses.

5. These people are phonies and pseudo intellectual and the major problem is a combination of emotional distraction and arrogance.
6. When frustrated in any way such as losing an election the liberal becomes emotional and irrational.
7. When arrogance is challenged the individual becomes totally irrational and tries to destroy his opponent and rile up any mob.
8. This person cannot ever make it in any crisis.

Matt 8:18-

v18: Now when Jesus saw by intensely studying the great crowd of the mob around him (30,000), he commanded and gave orders to embark over to the other shore across the sea of Galilee and separate from the mob.

Lesson #609 Series # 458 Matt 8:18- Dynamics for Disaster

- I. The key to dynamics for disaster is to understand when it is going to occur and be ready for it with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - A. Pseudo Intellectuals
 1. People with high IQ in all areas are pseudo intellectuals
 2. There is truth and around it is a wall
 3. The wall is made up of philosophical, sociological, intellectual, Marxist concepts which people understand but never delve into the real truth to see that these are EVIL.
 4. The pseudo intellectual cannot ever survive in a historical crisis.
 5. No person who has High IQ and has no roots in Bible Doctrine can survive a disaster crisis.
 6. The only survivors in the dark ages who were of high intelligence were those who anchored their concepts in Bible Doctrine.
 7. Apart from these with Bible Doctrine it was a panic and total disaster.
 - B. The reason smart people are dumb is because of arrogance.
 1. Scar Tissue of the Soul builds up pressure and this fosters arrogance.
 2. You can have a genius IQ but arrogance produces blind spots and thus some of the smartest people in the world today are the dumbest.
 3. Arrogance makes a person stupid.
 4. The more arrogance is fed the more blind the person becomes to the truth.
 5. The only way to be truly smart and discerning is to be totally free from arrogance.
 - C. The great problem with arrogant people is that their problems are most important more than anything else.
 1. The arrogant person always thinks his personal problem is more important than anything else in life.
 2. Your time is nothing to them and only listening to their problems is important.
 3. They are totally insensitive to the thoughts and feelings and functions of other people.
 4. They are selfish and self centered.
 5. These people never have a true friend and no one ever likes them they are a pain in the ass totally thoughtless and a bother and arrogant and it never occurs to them that someone else may have a far greater need than they.
 6. When you have to command an organization don't look for very smart people but look for people who are oriented to authority and inculcated with self discipline and thoughtful.
 7. The arrogant person is no good in any organization until you whip every ounce of arrogance out of them and replace it with discipline.
 8. There are a few organizations such as military and proper academic institutions where you can knock the arrogance out of them thus giving them some meaning in life and make a human being out of them.
 9. The problem today in the military is that some mommy's boy or girl today whines to mommy and she thus whines to her congressman and these should be put into a system

today.

10. Everyone in our system of public education has been trained to think he is the most important thing in the world and the only other important thing is protecting the atmosphere and that the government control all business functions and other evil thinking infiltrated into their souls.
 11. This is the development in historical collapse of any nation and ours is not an exception and is susceptible to the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline.
 12. These persons are totally divorced from reality and preoccupied with self and loves self and there are no rivals for this inordinate self centered arrogance.
- D. This scribe thinks his desire to follow Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is to the advantage of Jesus and Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ thinks it is to his disadvantage.
1. The scribe is an academic person and he is speaking as an equal using authority by calling Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ professor
 2. Other believers who come up to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ use the word for deity to address Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
 3. He is respectful but does not really respect the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
 4. He follows what he considers the correct protocol to speak with an equal and this shows up his arrogance.
- E. Principle:
1. It was convenient for this pseudo intellectual type to recognize limited authority in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
 - i. Arrogance always thinks of authority in terms of convenience
 - ii. The authority of the police is convenient if he is protecting your property
 - iii. It is convenient to have a commander in the military to sign your furloughs but not to follow him in combat.
 - iv. It is convenient to have a Pastor Teacher if you need a character reference but not convenient to come listen to Bible Doctrine regularly.
 - v. It is convenient to have a doctor when you have pain but not as a friend.
 2. Arrogance is disassociated from reality to the extent that all authority is not true establishment authority but only a matter of personal convenience.
 - i. You have not lived until someone has used you and your authority to gain their OWN ends.
 3. Obviously this was pseudo recognition of the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and pseudo intellectuals are only capable of this.
 - i. The arrogance of this hypocrite would only allow him to recognize only his own authority
 - ii. In his thinking he always subordinates all genuine authority to his own arrogance.
 - iii. The true authority is his own arrogance in his thinking.
 4. This person in arrogance assumes that his high IQ and quickness with words makes him superior to the Human Race.
 - i. Then arrogance makes this assumption as resident arrogance inevitably does the individual as arrogance increases divorces self from reality and is susceptible to neuroses and psychoses and other things.
 5. As is too often the case with smart people their assumption of superiority over others divorces them from reality of life and the resultant arrogance give them inflexibility with regard to non essentials.
 - i. Once inflexible with regard to non essentials you become totally flexible with regard to essentials.
 6. This smart believer is extremely self centered and assumes that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ cannot wait to hear his verbal declaration of loyalty and dedication to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
 - i. This man will remind us of many believers we have known.

- ii. Look our constantly for the person who is always telling you how loyal he is to you and would do anything for you.
 - iii. These are the people who are knifing you in the back and cutting your throat and only an arrogant person would believe these the worst people in the world.
 - iv. Only facing reality from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will allow you to see through this viscous hypocrisy.
- 7. Arrogance has blinded this smart believer to his real value NOTHING.
- 8. Being smart and having quick perceptive ability this scribe attaches erroneous importance to his pseudo intellectuality.
 - i. All Christians who are smart and who become pseudo intellectual inevitably follow rationalism and empiricism as their systems of perception.
 - ii. These are absolutely hopeless in the process of learning Bible Doctrine and thus in following such systems one cannot ever understand Bible Doctrine.
- 9. Arrogance and self centeredness has divorced this scribe from reality and is no different from any believer who have GNOSIS in the Left Lobe and can quote Bible Doctrine by points back to you.
 - i. They have no Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but can quote it consistently.
 - ii. They have no capability spiritually nor from the standpoint of Modus Operandi in life.
- 10. Being smart and possessing quick perceptive ability has occupational hazards:
 - i. Lack of common sense
 - ii. Disorientation to life
 - iii. Arrogance
 - iv. Self centeredness
 - v. Feeling of self importance
- 11. Self Righteous Arrogance is the one who makes a socialist or Marxist out of all pseudo intellectuals.
 - i. This is the smart arrogant pseudo intellectual
 - ii. This arrogant professor who is a socialist is dogmatic in thinking self right and it gives him Self Righteousness just like the legalistic Pharisee and baptist has today in the point system and the rich young ruler.
 - iii. When a smart person falls into these occupational hazards he becomes emotionally unstable and this eventuates in neuroses or psychoses
 - iv. This scribe is not quite at this stage but is a slave to how he feels being involved in the hazards but saturated yet.
- F. The ideas of one shot decisions to correct all your problems and coming forward for reaffirmation of faith etc is totally idiotic.
- G. The very important principle is found in the idea "I will follow you anywhere"
 - 1. There must be even a small grain of true thought in it for someone must lead and someone must follow.
 - 2. This scribe is an arrogant bastard and has no true thought in what he is saying to the Lord.
 - 3. He is emotionally unstable without any commitment or dedication.
 - 4. Being full of emotion and under its influence this scribe makes a verbal dedication to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
 - 5. This is a dogmatic emotional unstable statement and emotion always expresses itself through SINcerity.
 - 6. Sincerity is directly connected to the emotion and thus of no value in any crisis and this scribe will be a dropout.
 - 7. Sincerity is as meaningless as the emotion which originates it.
 - 8. Arrogance produces sincerity and emotion produces it.

H. Principle:

1. This statement is dogmatic and if you are going to be sincere you must be dogmatic and it is also emotional.
 - i. It is sincere and arrogant
 - ii. This is emotional sincere arrogant and dogmatic as a statement.
2. The dative case implies that the scribe is doing Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ a favor by following him.
 - i. He is saying this and looking to see who is around to see his dedication.
3. The scribe's emotional decision has no meaning.
 - i. Neither does any other emotional decision and emotional decisions have no spiritual connotations.
 - ii. God the Holy Spirit is not in the business of emotion.
 - iii. Emotion must remain subordinate to many things in life and not in control of anything in life.
 - iv. When emotion takes over the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you have no capacity for life or love or happiness and in a historical crisis or disaster you will never survive and it will destroy you.
4. Verbal dedication means nothing in the Christian Way of Life.
 - i. For overt and verbal dedication merely expresses emotional reversionism or instability.
 - ii. It is important to make decisions all the time but you don't have to advertise your decisions but should be living life as unto the Lord.
 - iii. You are not advertising what a lovely Christian you are by pronouncing you will follow the Lord anywhere.
 - iv. You may impress others with your expressions but they have no meaning.
 - v. The only decisions which have meaning in your life are those which occur in the privacy of your soul.
5. This verbal dedication is comparable to our dedications to full time Christian service, reaffirmation of faith, re-dedication, surrendering to preach etc.
6. verbal dedications of all categories are no substitute for Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine teaching after salvation.
7. This dedication is based on the fact that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ had given the command to depart in the prior verse and being smart the scribe concluded that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was bluffing.
 - i. He was thinking that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ would never leave a great thing like the crowd who loved him and are impressed and recognize him and compliment him.
 - ii. He was thinking he would never leave but say this also but when they begged him to stay he would stay.
 - iii. He is impugning the motivation of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and ascribing to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ his own motivation.

I. What the scribe said was an innuendo:

1. Hopu + Aeon == wherever you go
 - i. The problem is that Aeon introduces DOUBT and is the intro to the 3rd class conditional sentence maybe you will and maybe you won't go.
2. Aperchomai == an action purposed but not taking place AND with Aeon not likely to take place.
3. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ produces the action allegedly so that if Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ then allegedly the scribe will go.
4. This is a 3rd class conditional clause introducing doubt on the part of the scribe.
5. It says, IF YOU GO I WILL FOLLOW YOU.
6. He is assuming that the Lord will not go and that he has made a safe but impressive

- dedication and it would cost him nothing.
7. To the scribe the departure of the Lord is a possibility but NOT reality.
 8. **PEOPLE DIVORCED FROM REALITY CANNOT EVER ACCEPT REALITY.**
 9. **When reality is disaster they cannot cope with it.**
 10. *To arrogance there is nothing greater than human approbation.*
 11. *The worst thing which can ever happen to a human being is to desire the approbation of the crowd and it destroys the talented people and this is why the phoniest people in the world are in show business.*
 12. *Show business is designed to divorce you from reality and if you have talent and are going to play a part you must divorce self from reality of your life and enter into the part you are going to play.*
 13. *Once you play a few parts and have approbation of the crowd you are divorced from reality and it is a narcotic and you must have it all the time and then if you start to lose the attention you have to go into wild activities to gain more attention.*
- J. Those who are influenced by approbation cannot ever handle disaster.
1. This is why American politicians are of no value in the world we live in as they are in the game for approbation and though 90% may be smart people individually they are so divorced from reality they will be destroyed in the next disaster.
 2. You can see this in the panic of hooking up with the most evil nation in the world, CHINA and in the reliance on the UN
 3. China is the worst most evil nation in the world and has the greatest systems of torture in the history of mankind and make Russia look like good people.
- K. Instead of getting his motivation from Bible Doctrine taught by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ he is in arrogance taking his motivation and superimposing it on Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
1. To do this you must have an umbrella of arrogance.
 2. He will never make it to matriculation of the course in disaster.

Matt 8:19

v19: And one scholar, over educated and a pseudo intellectual, like those others who had excuses and would dropout and are categorical failures, having boldly and arrogantly approached before all the people he said to him (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ) assuming it was to the advantage of Jesus, "Professor, I will follow you wherever IF you go."

Lesson #610 Series # 458 Matt 8:20- Dynamics for Disaster

- I. Freedom Historically and how to keep it:
- A. We are at a crisis point in the history of the United States of America from the 1970's till now
 1. We have weathered much in our history because of the principle of what a man thinks so he is.
 2. We have always been clear in our thinking and valued thought and understood its value above any other system of life.
 3. Because of our understanding of freedom, principles of Bible Doctrine we have been able to understand and handle historical disaster.
 - B. Since the reformation when protestant movement have come into existence we have been accused of a lot of things which are nonsense.
 1. In the military for instance many of the greatest soldiers were the Huguenots after the persecutions of Louis XIV.
 2. Frederick William understood the principle that if a little nation wanted to become a great nation and they wanted to guarantee the security of the people the way to do it is to follow the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 3. The Hohenzollern family were also great theologians and the influence of protestant reformation on these people was phenomenal
 4. Frederic came up with the idea that everyone should serve in the military and this not only was good for protection of the nation under freedom through military victory and it also oriented people for life.
 5. His system of discipline was extremely effective and at the same time he realized that

free enterprise was the only answer and profit is a legitimate principle in the momentum of life and motivation of life.

6. The concept of profit is extremely important and government cannot ever be so big that it discourages free enterprise.
7. He opened the doors of his little country and let the Huguenots come in because they having understood biblical principle they had already developed the concept of free enterprise.
8. This concept we had picked up and used for our past prosperity
9. In a time of emergency he knew everyone needed to be able to think and concentrate and the difference between cowardice and courage is the ability to concentrate and think under pressure to apply principles you have.

C. Then there was another Frederick William who had another army which was also great and had one group the Potsdam guard where he went all over the world and acquired giants by persuasion or kidnapping etc and formed them into a special unit but found that he had another problem.

1. He had developed the military under the concept of freedom through military victory and that all prosperity of any nation must come from small government and big business and had one of the finest manufacturing systems at the beginning of the industrial revolution.
2. He understood the worth of all of the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment under freedom, privacy, property and authority and putting these also into action.
3. He was putting these into action in a magnificent way at a time when Europe was undergoing historical crises with the rise of Russia which was moving to conquer Europe.
4. England was busy in the business of its colonization system and was struggling with its colonies in India or American with France which suffered from the arrogance of Louis XIV and XV.
5. All around this little country of Brandenburg and Prussia it was surrounded by Russia and Scandinavians and Austrian Empire of the Holy Roman Empire and the French were squeezing central Europe.
6. Frederick William had a son Fritz and he was not interested in any of these things and did not even speak German but the language of Voltaire and was a musician and played the flute and his father broke many of these over his back but he kept on doing this and was reactionary to his fathers ideas
7. He decided one day to run away to France until his father died and he with Lt. Von Kapt headed for the border and they were captured and returned and Von Kapt was shot and Frederick William almost had his son shot but decided to put his son through basic training "Beast Barracks" in his military to make a man out of him.
8. This young man was actually a genius and all he needed was to have inculcation of discipline and relate this to life and not only did he understand the Hohenzollern policies but added to it from his genius.
9. When he became King as Frederick II he became one of the greatest captains and a military genius and famous for many things including the oblique order of battle which he actually took from Apamanondus who used it at the battle of Lukra long before this time.
10. He put this whole concept and put it together in such a way he realized with one system of thought he could turn the world upside down and this was discipline and Bible Doctrine.
11. The protestants of Prussia are not those of today They were the Huguenots who came out of France and others who were very tough and oriented to life and very unusual people.
12. He had these ideas on which he insisted and using his own genius and innovation he came up with a fantastic army and an incredible system of manufacturing and a people oriented to 2 principles of life.
 - i. Their relationship to the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ through Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Bible Doctrine

- ii. Their relationship to the Laws of Divine Establishment
 - iii. These would be put to the test.
- 13. Frederick recognized history for what it was and properly interpreting it for what it was say a great coal mine called Silesia to the south and east of him and he decided to do something about it.
- 14. All he had to do was keep his ear to the ground and he discovered that Austria and France and Russia were sitting around a table dividing up Silesia and what he did was march his troops in and said it belongs to Prussia.
- 15. Immediately he found himself on a system of interior lines like the marines in the Korean war where they were retreating and found themselves surrounded and said FINE now maybe we can shoot a few of them.
- D. First a large army of Austrians came up from the south 90,000 and he moved to a place called Luthen with 28,000 met them and through use of the oblique order of battle and superior discipline and motivation of Bible Doctrine he totally annihilated this army and put Austria back for about 1 year.
 - 1. Then the french marched across the Rhine and moved into his territory and he moved and met them at Rausback and still being outnumbered he defeated them and just when the battle was over he heard the Russian were moving toward Berlin.
 - 2. Then he moved to just east of Berlin. and with a small army of 17,000 he defeated over 55,000 Russians and with their new needle rifles they killed about 27,000 in one day.
 - 3. This was just the beginning of the 7 years war or the French and Indian War.
 - 4. This was not the end of the thought.
- E. WE have been in a jam in this country for over 50 years and have had many presidents who are greater traitors than Benedict Arnold including Carter, Clinton, and especially Obama who all sold us out to the communists and Marxists and islam.
 - 1. We are big government and little people and have interference with free enterprise
 - 2. We have interference with free enterprise constantly and in every aspect of business and the ONLY people who have a right to make decisions in business are those who invest their money and have to meet payrolls and executives.
 - 3. Labor never has any right except to work or quit but never to demand changes in their conditions and this is in fact destroying us.
 - 4. In addition industry is being attacked in every possible way including energy companies which are constantly being hamstrung and regulated into submission.
 - 5. We should be advancing in the use of various energies and the country areas with great energy cannot even use it there.
 - 6. This is idiocy and typical of imbecility of bureaucracies and one sign of truly being an idiot is to be a part of any government bureau.
 - 7. Wiping out the bureaucracies totally would save incredible money and put us back to free enterprise aggressiveness and re-institute motivation.
 - 8. In the economic and military realm we are being destroyed and we have ignored and rejected the biblical principle of freedom through military victory.
 - 9. The army navy and air force and marine corps are being used for idiotic sociological experimentation and this is totally destructive to military functions.
 - 10. We from the 70's been a secondary power in the world and Russian systems of artillery and biological warfare which we never have heard about because of cowardice in the media.
- F. WE can turn things around but we must not consider revolution but must focus on the Laws of Divine Establishment and reestablishing the function of the Laws of Divine Establishment in our land.
 - 1. We have had 2 wars for independence the first called the Revolutionary war which was not a revolution and the 2nd called the civil war which the south lost only because of the principle of manifest destiny.

2. The principle must be recognizing by which we meet all crises in life whether personal related to living or dying or after death, or national or historical involving several nations or the whole world which are always met the same way.
- G. Frederick the Great departed from the scene by winning the 7 years war.
1. This was only the beginning and it became another category of thinking with the idea of a unified Germany.
 2. This was passed on from Frederick to Bismark and he saw the importance of putting together a central power in Europe to set up a system of balance of power as it was erroneous in many ways and led to many systems of tyranny.
 3. He set up the M's Telegraph and made France look like the aggressor and the Franco Prussian war of 1870 perpetuated into WWI and the great problem in Europe has always been balance of power.
 4. Unification of Germany in 1870 destroyed the problem of balance of power and they never recovered while the unification of Germany set up a new balance but it focused attention on the Balkans and Slavic peoples.
 5. Prior to WWI there was Serbia and Balkans and all had ideas of expansion and the thought moved out from the center and the concept moved from this area like a wave leading to 20th century history in Europe.
- H. Now there is another evil thought abroad called by us Communism and it is EVIL.
1. This is a combination and is eclectic and included concepts from Feurbach and Hegel and put together by Marx and has developed into a thought and concept related to philosophical materialism and that man is an animal and that there is no God and no reality in spiritual things.
 2. (See communist brainwashing techniques which RB Thieme gave some years ago)
 3. When you rattle the sword that is thesis if that does not work then go to the ideas of world peace and understanding and exchange of ideas and this is antithesis and the objective remains conquest of the world.
 4. The only thing which can stop communism cold is the principles of Bible Doctrine.
- I. WE can look at gun control for reorienting our thinking to our subject:
1. We must recognize the principle of freedom as defined by Bible Doctrine and our constitution
 - i. In order to have freedom you must have privacy
 - ii. In addition there must be property and authority over all and all are necessary for freedom
 2. If a person decides that he wants to own a gun he has a right to go purchase a gun without anyone registering it or anything else and when we are required to do this freedom is being violated by government.
 3. This is how we have gained our EVIL GOVERNMENT.
 4. The gun is his property he possessing can now keep it and do anything he wants to with it provided he does not violate common law and murdering someone, (This is not killing the enemy however).
 5. He who lives by the sword will die by the sword this refers to criminals who should be executed.
 6. Criminals will always have some system of violence to gain his advantage and practice his profession of crime and this should not effect the rights and freedom of lawful citizens.
 7. Possession of my weapons gives me Authority to protect my own property and privacy thus owning a gun is something everyone should have and not only should they own guns but know how to use them effectively.
 8. This is one of the greatest principles related to freedom and it should not in any way violated.
 9. The 2nd amendment to the constitution states it clearly: A well-regulated militia, being

necessary to the security of a free State, the right of the people to keep and bear arms, shall not be infringed.

- i. Militia and People are not the same
 - ii. Militia are also people but not all people are militia.
 - iii. The military has a right to use arms in their profession but also the people have a right to use arms to protect their freedom and property.
10. When any nation state or local government passes laws to prohibit the private ownership and use of firearms by private citizens the law has been distorted into tyranny.
 - i. The fact that so many people have accepted this and have taken this idea that since criminals use guns there must be something wrong with guns and it never occurs to them that there is something wrong with criminals.
 11. Every family in the United States of America should have guns in every room and they were loaded and kept around the house strategically placed to be used by the owners if needed if any criminal ever entered.
 - i. Every child should be trained to use all sorts of guns.
 - ii. Winchester Model 21 sawed off was the favorite defensive weapon of R. B. Thieme Jr when growing up.
 12. No one ever will be hurt with guns if they know how to use them and learn about them and discipline.
 13. People must learn how to use the guns they own in order to deter crime and the Sullivan laws of NYC are idiotic and sends citizens to jail for protecting themselves against crime and violence.
 14. The principle is that a disarmed citizenry is a helpless citizenry and easily controlled.
 15. Thus the gun is one of the systems of freedom and killing is a matter of volition of the soul like any sin and weapons are not the system of volition it is what is in the soul.
 16. People kill others because they have self consciousness, mentality and memory and distorted Norms and Standards and Frame of Reference and above all because they have free will and because of their own free will they do it.
 17. Even an insane person decides to kill and should be executed for it and insanity should never be the issue before the law
 18. The Old Sin Nature cannot ever be legislated and you cannot stop crime and violence by passing laws against the means employed no matter the weapon used.
 19. There are always those under influence of evil who think the private citizen has no business possessing weapons.
 20. This is an anti biblical concept in every way.

Prov 6:9-

v9: How long will you lie down, O sluggard (public opinion)? When will you arise from your sleep of liberal erroneous thinking?

v10: A little sleep, a little slumber of apathy, a little folding of the hands to rest,

v11: and your poverty of apathetic thinking will come in like a criminal, and your need will be like for an armed soldier in battle or you will need weapons as violence will be the order of the day.

21. **We must remember the 3rd Punic war to keep everyone on neutral ground.**
 - i. **The Carthaginians agreed with Rome after being defeated to not defend themselves nor wage any war**
 - ii. **Then the Romans then stirred up the Numidians and when the Carthaginians appealed to Rome they ignored them and when the Numidians came to the walls of the city the Carthaginians defeated and drove them out.**
 - iii. **The roman senate was very upset with them and decided that the only thing to do since Carthage had broken the treaty was to go down and destroy them and the senate had worked this out in a Machiavellian way.**
 - iv. **When roman troops got to the city the Carthaginians threw up the flag of truce and said they would do anything Rome wanted and Scipio the Younger**

came to them and told them that they had to surrender all their arms to be allowed to continue.

- v. They first had to send 300 young boys the eldest sons of all the royal families to the roman camp.
- vi. Then they had to strip their arsenal and they carried catapults and hundreds of thousands of stands of arms and vast military supplies to the roman camp and all shipping had to be surrendered.
- vii. Now when the city was defenseless Rome announced that they would now destroy the city and transport the people into slavery and at this time the roman army had to stop to celebrate having been so very successful without any casualties and this lasted for 3-4 weeks
- viii. At this time the Carthaginians closed their gates and they began to make improvised weapons and used the temples and melted down metals to make things into weapons and without any weapons or very poor weapons they held out against Roman armies for 4 years.
- ix. Finally the walls were breached and the city was conquered and what happened after that was so disastrous that Palivius the historian quoted homer over and over again.
- x. This is what happens when people lose the security of weaponry in their lives.

22. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ stated this in simple terms also:

Luke 11:21

v21: Whenever that person strong with integrity, common sense thinking and alertness and perspicacity and ability to orient to all situations and human reconnaissance ability and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, after having been completely well armed possessing weapons knowing how to use the weapons, he guards and defends his own home therefore his possessions and his loved ones remain undisturbed;

- i. A well armed person who possesses weapons can use his equipment in a disaster and uses his mind to concentrate and his weapons properly in a disaster situation.
- ii. This strong person with common sense from Metabolized Bible Doctrine must be prepared for violence, crime and attack.
- iii. This person maintains alertness and guards and defends his own home

23. The word of God demands that you must have 2 things that must be coordinated in any crisis:

- i. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
- ii. Weaponry to face the crisis
- iii. Combining these you have effectiveness.
- iv. READ: Guerrilla Warfare 2 volumes illustrate
- v. Being properly motivated in the soul and having proper weaponry guarantees maintenance of freedom.

J. The crowd was around Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ because they were impressed by many thing about him, personality, strength, miracles etc.

1. Some listened to his message and understood he was a unique person of the universe
2. They were able to reason that he was either GOD or the greatest liar who ever lived.
3. He made it clear that he was God and demonstrated that he was the God man and that he was the unique one of the universe come to provide eternal salvation and fulfill and demonstrate the principle of the Integrity of God.
4. Review the Integrity of God
 - i. Composed of the Righteousness of God and Justice of God
5. When man sinned the Righteousness of God rejected it and the Justice of God condemned the sin and thus man was under condemnation.
6. The answer to this is Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
7. The answer begins with physical birth where soul life is imputed to the format soul and

- combined with Biological Life giving physical life or Human Life
8. In addition Adam's Original Sin imputed at physical birth results in instant condemnation
 9. All personal sins were thus able to be collected and imputed to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross and no human being is ever held responsible for their personal sins for condemnation.
 10. Our sins were imputed to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on order that God can provide Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God potential.
 11. Our option for salvation requires only faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
- K. In his presentation of himself to this large mob where many had believed in him already.
1. The mob is absolutely without authority and can be a revolution, demonstration, protest but in all cases is evil.
 2. The mob is unstable and irrational and sinks to the lowest common denominator and open to any propaganda from any demagog.
 3. There must be teaching of believers and some have learned a lot of Bible Doctrine and those under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine must be separated from the MOB.
 4. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ gave a command and some would recognize his authority and obey his command and be separated into a classroom and learn the dynamics for disaster.
- L. This scribe is a student and has a high IQ and intellectual and has great perspicacity but is pseudo intellectual.
1. Around truth there is a wall and he has never penetrated the wall to get to the truth.
 2. His concepts do not have roots in truth and thus his perspicacity has given him a great deal of information about many things
 3. Being a scribe (PhD) he has been thoroughly educated and has a great deal of knowledge about many subjects and NONE are related to truth.
 4. This is why so many college professors are socialistic and communistic having information and have learned many things but without any relationship to truth and are pseudo intellectuals.
 5. When they hear truth and reject it they begin to build Scar Tissue of the Soul and as it builds in the soul it causes arrogance to develop and a smart person who has rejected truth an increased arrogance factor.
 6. This arrogance blinds the smart person and makes them DUMB stupid and almost imbecilic.
 7. We say constantly "How can people be communists and see evidence of free enterprise and motivation of freedom and have men in government who are communists. How can anyone be socialist and think it is the answer and ever buy the welfare state function. How can we have graduated income tax that it is very clear from scripture that fixed income tax such as 10% is the answer and does not destroy motivation and provides enough money for efficient small government."
 8. This pseudo intellectual scribe is a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and has made his sincere statement of being willing to follow Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ anywhere.
- M. Principle:
1. By use of the 3rd class condition "IF you go" the scribe not only doubts the departure of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ but impugns his motivation.
 - i. He as a pseudo intellectual lives for approbation from the crowd and he thinks that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ with this huge crowd of 30-50,000 will never walk away from this.
 - ii. He wants this approbation and follows Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ to learn methods of siphoning off some of this approbation.
 - iii. His rejection of certain tenets of Bible Doctrine has resulted in Scar Tissue of the Soul and build up of great arrogance.

- iv. He thus assumes erroneously as all arrogant people do, that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ thinks as he thinks and that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ would not leave that crowd just as he would not leave it.
 - v. He thinks like those in entertainment in terms of approbation which is their desire and happiness and thus he has no capacity for life, happiness or blessing or anything at all.
 - vi. He will be the one hurt and is a dropout before the course in dynamics for disaster even begins.
2. Being arrogant and Self Righteous the scribe thinks of success in terms of a large crowd and big numbers
 - i. In the spiritual world numbers are inconsequential and it is Positive Volition which is important.
 3. If the situation were reversed and the scribe had this crowd following him he would remain in his place of approbation and comfort.
 4. He would never cross the lake to a set of uncertain and unknown circumstances.
 - i. He looks at the life from Human Viewpoint and has no interest in Bible Doctrine and his driving motivation is to push self for approbation and recognition.
 5. The scribe will follow him as far as the ship but when he discovers that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has no reservations and no place to actually go on the other side he will decline
 - i. He is a believer and will be in heaven but a failure for any catastrophe personal or historical crisis.
 - ii. He follows the Lord as long as it does not interfere with his personal comfort.
 - iii. Without Bible Doctrine the scribe does not have the integrity nor moral courage to venture out into the unknown circumstances of a ship on dangerous seas and uncertain conditions.

N. The Integrity of God:

1. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the Justice of God imputes to us the Righteousness of God $\frac{1}{2}$ of the Integrity of God
 - i. What the Righteousness of God demands the Justice of God must execute.
2. This sets up the pipeline between the Justice of God and Righteousness of God in us for future blessing.
3. If the Justice of God is going to impute blessing to the believer he must impute it on the basis that it is going to the Righteousness of God in us.
 - i. Perfect God has a perfect plan for imperfect humanity.
 - ii. The Justice of God cannot impute blessing to anyone for their great efforts or great personality or morality or lack of any of these things.
 - iii. God never blesses us on the basis of who and what we are but on who and what he is.
 - iv. HE imputes from his justice to the Righteousness of God in us 6 categories of blessing when we have capacity
 - v. We build capacity from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine consistently
 - vi. This pipeline is insulated against human works and there is nothing we can think, decide or do to gain blessing.
 - vii. We must have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to build capacity and then we will receive to the Righteousness of God in us spiritual, temporal, association, historical impact, Undeserved Suffering and dying grace blessings.
 - viii. Once God gives us his Absolute Righteousness we then have potential for blessing in time and based on our capacity for blessing from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God we

- will receive this blessing.
- ix. This blessing in time is converted to blessing in eternity imputed to the Resurrection Body with Eternal Life and this is the afortiori logic completion of blessing.
- x. This is the structure of the Plan of God.
- xi. Within this structure we also receive at the same time the ability, thought content, doctrinal system to face any disaster in life.
- xii. This also gives us the capacity for happiness and blessing in life.
- 4. The scribe loses all of this because of his spurious enthusiasm and it is artificial and comes from the emotion of the soul rather than Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - i. Because of his arrogance from Scar Tissue of the Soul his arrogance stimulated an emotional dedication beautifully said eloquently and beautifully but was totally meaningless.
 - ii. It was spoken so the crowd would see he was a dedicated man
 - iii. Like so many pseudo intellectuals who when faced with a command which demands sacrifice or suffering or difficulty you must make the right sounds so that you don't lose face but must depart to some more comfortable set of circumstances
 - iv. There is no ability there to recognize that the greatest slavery in life is to circumstances.
 - v. When you don't like your circumstances you are unhappy and when you change them you are happy again.
 - vi. This is irrational through and through and happiness is designed by God for when you are in any circumstance.
- 5. Pseudo intellectual and always sincere and emotional and impulsive and his statement was impulsive
 - i. Emotion produces impulsive actions and we must get away from impulsive actions and move to rational action meaningful and based on application of Bible Doctrine to experience.
 - ii. Emotion and arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul produce sincere dedication and impulse.
 - iii. Emotion is good if used properly and must be subordinated to our Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and we can have emotion when our thinking stimulates it to respond to it.
 - iv. When we see the enemy destroyed in our country and outside our country we can be aroused to a fevered pitch emotionally.
- 6. The scribe was enthusiastic about the sermon on the mount but Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ had changed the subject and this believer from lack of the whole realm of Bible Doctrine would beat a hasty retreat.
 - i. When the arrogant person starts impugning your motives he has had it already and lost
 - ii. He has destroyed the very basic principle of freedom which is whatever my motives are they are only MY business not yours.
 - iii. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ knows what he is doing and he is totally out of line.
 - iv. This scribe has not concept of the principles of leadership and does not understand that there is no such thing as freedom security or spiritual thrust in any people unless there is AUTHORITY which is the key to everything.
 - v. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ must establish his authority with those with Positive Volition.
- O. Conclusion:
 - 1. This disciple was precipitous instead of perceptive.

2. He was emotional sincere overtly dedicated enthusiastic, impulsive and a total failure,.
 - i. This was the cult culture prior to World War II.
3. ***This category of believer cannot face in any way historical disaster and as our lord's answer shows in v20 the pseudo intellectual is totally divorced from reality and cannot even face the most superficial type of testing in uncertainty.***
4. ***If you cannot face uncertainty you cannot face any level of disaster.***
5. Reality is based on flexibility with regard to non essentials in life and inflexibility with regard to essentials of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. Through our personal thinking we must set a scale of values and set priorities and Bible Doctrine must be the essential and all other things in life must be non essential.
 - ii. If you reverse it you will never succeed in life.
6. Added to this his arrogance, emotion, Scar Tissue of the Soul, impulsiveness, sincerity and this person completely destroys self when there is a catastrophe and eliminates self.
 - i. This is the majority of believers today.
 - ii. This disassociates us all from reality.
 - iii. We should have rose up on arms when the B1 was canceled and when SALT talks started
 - iv. WE should rise up in arms against the executive orders of BO and this is tragic.
 - v. American statesmanship departed from this country when politicians became divorced from reality
 - vi. This starts with liberalism and liberals have no concept of reality and is totally divorced from reality as seen in:
 - a. Canceling atomic energy plants
 - b. OSHA
 - c. EPA
 - d. BATFE
 - e. Indians crying about the trash
 - f. Moslems and illegals in the country
 - g. Syrian Refugees
 - vii. This believer has substituted emotion enthusiasm, sincerity, dedication and impulsiveness for true motivation from Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - viii. This is Christianity today since the 70's and have joined the rest of the nation in being totally divorced from reality in any way.
 - ix. This is so bad that when the United States goes down we will have medieval times and dark ages again.
7. There is no substitute for Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and every day is a day of preparation for disaster and suffering.
 - i. Every day is a God given chance to learn more Metabolized Bible Doctrine which alone carries us through disaster.
 - ii. This and most believers are too shallow, smart, arrogant to move toward Bible Doctrine and the ability to handle disaster.
 - iii. This scribe represents smart, shallow, sincere superficial believers always fade in normal circumstances and thus never face abnormal circumstances of life.
 - iv. These believers who fade out every year for any reason and will eventually be in heaven but in the mean time they are useless and casualties in the Angelic Conflict.
 - v. The reasons they give for fading out are distractions and disoriented from Priority #1 which is to be Bible Doctrine.

Matt 8:19

v19: And one scholar, over educated and a pseudo intellectual, like those others who had excuses and would dropout and

are categorical failures, having boldly and arrogantly approached before all the people he said to him (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ) assuming it was to the advantage of Jesus, "Professor, I will follow you wherever IF you go."

Lesson #611

Series # 458

Matt 8:20-

Dynamics for Disaster

- I. Freedom:
 - A. Freedom comes from military victory on battlefields and never from the vociferous meanderings and vocalizations of politicians
 - 1. Military since the 1960's has been persona non grata with government
 - 2. When government gets too big the military suffers always
 - 3. We have down graded military for 50 years and used it for social experiments now with females in combat groups which will destroy us totally soon.
 - 4. Military is one of the most honorable professions in the history of man ever.
 - 5. Even during the reign of Napoleon military was down graded.
 - i. His greatest battle Austerlitz
 - ii. A small army and interior lines and moral courage to wait and time it perfectly.
 - iii. The only thorn at Austerlitz was Napoleon's own brother who led his 4th regiment one of his crack regiments.
 - B. We with Bible Doctrine understand thoroughly the importance of the military in our freedom.
 - 1. The symbol of our freedom is the uniform of our service men in our military.
 - 2. Because this is ignored today more than in 1978 and beyond it is a sign of the degeneracy and stupidity and shortsightedness of American thought and leadership and the fallacy of maintaining national integrity without a strong military.
- II. Principle of Bible Doctrine.
 - A. If you can establish the fact that you are a member of the Human Race through any system of perception.
 - 1. If you are a human being, lower than angels and higher than animals then GOD has a plan for your life.
 - 2. It is imperative that you understand that you don't have to accept the Plan of God for your life.
 - 3. We try to be very careful as part of berachah to never invite anyone to church and never make anyone to feel under compulsion for any function of any aspect of the Spiritual Life.
 - i. No one invites a person to bible class and no one forces them into class and to listen.
 - ii. Once a person comes to bible class they decide to listen and we don't disturb anyone in class unless they sleep and snore or if they decide to marvel at beautiful women instead of paying attention.
 - 4. No one is too bad or too good no one too Self Righteousness or too evil no one is too liberal or conservative, no one too high or too low, the only prerequisite for being in the Plan of God is that you are a part of the Human Race.
 - 5. From Eternity Past God knew all about you every thought, decision and action all of your Modus Vivendi and Modus Operandi from cradle to grave.
 - 6. What you actually thought and decided in life and what you did was fed into the divine decree as actuality.
 - 7. Probabilities were not included in the decree but remain a part of the omniscience of God and remains part of alternatives of reality.
 - B. In dealing with a pseudo intellectual we know he has believed in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and will be in heaven no matter his failures or successes.
 - 1. His printout from the decree includes many areas including Election, Justification, foreknowledge, etc.
 - 2. We have a right and obligation to present FACTS for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God when a person shows an interest in God.

3. The Plan of God for the whole Human Race becomes obvious when we consider the outline contained in Imputation
- C. Review
1. Equation of Hope
 2. Imputations, Real and Judicial
 3. Condemnation and Salvation
 4. Potentials
 5. Hope or Absolute Confidence
 6. Realities
 7. Blessings and Rewards in time and eternity
 8. Exclusions of all human effort.
 9. Laws of Divine Establishment and Logistical Grace support for the plan until Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 10. Super-Grace in 3 categories as support for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 11. Essential of life Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
- D. God has a plan for every human being
1. Some remain in X Radical
 - i. There is no solution in X Radical except Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
 - ii. This challenge is to the unbeliever.
 2. Some move into Y Radical
 - i. The challenge in Y Radical is Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine consistently and constantly.
 3. Some make it to Z radical
 - i. The challenge in Z radical is LIFE itself to be lived by means of the capacity developed from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 4. The objective is to take in Bible Doctrine and reach Z Radical where there is found the solution for every problem disaster or catastrophe in life.
- E. Had the Pseudo Intellectual stepped into the ship and embarked across the sea and been a pluggger.
1. It is not the genius people nor talented people who make it in life it is the pluggers of life with self discipline
 2. These people have self discipline today tomorrow and the next day to understand the objective and no matter the distraction which comes your way.
 3. Smart people often don't make it in life or any effort because of distraction and often arrogance on their part.
 4. The Pluggers are the ones who make it.luggers
 5. Life was better when a person was held to a standard of performance
- F. The Plan of God for our life includes the ability to handle any catastrophe of disaster.

Job 5:17-

v17: "Behold, happy is the man adjusted to the Justice of God whom God disciplines; therefore do not despise the chastening or Divine Discipline of the Almighty Lord.

v18: For he wounds the carnal believer with Divine Discipline, in order that he may bind up with recovery of the Spiritual Life; he bruises the believer in reversionism in order that his hands may heal and make whole through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

v19: From six troubles, crises, catastrophes or disasters, he will deliver, preserve or rescue you by your concentrated thinking and applying Bible Doctrine, mature Believer in Super-Grace status, furthermore in seven the evil of satanic Doctrine will not meddle with nor touch nor produce its desired effect on you, as long as you are insulated by Bible Doctrine.

v20: In famine, depression or economic disaster he will redeem or deliver or purchase or preserve you, Mature Believers, from death from Eternity Past, in war or military disaster from the power of the sword in battle,

v21: you will be protected and hidden by the Integrity of God, delivered from the lash or scourge of the tongue in social

disasters from maligning, judging and gossip, neither will you be afraid being unable to think under the pressures of destruction, violent death, ruin, oppression, tyranny, when it comes because of Dying Grace.

v22: You will relax and laugh with a sense of humor from Relaxed Mental Attitude from Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and maximum relationship with the Integrity of God, at violent physical death and at economic depression because of dying grace and super grace status in time, neither will you be afraid of wild animals or violent death nor any dangerous instruments of death because of maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God.

v23: For your contract will be with the stones of the battlefield the artillery or bombs or missiles or other weapons of destruction of the military, and the wild animals of the field which kill man like conventional weapons will be at peace with you and pass you by, or will not destroy you until the Lord is ready for you to die,

v24: Therefore you have already learned and will know that your human body is in a state of prosperity and peace while dying (Mature believers in Z Radical die with minimum pain) and you will visit with great pleasure your home in heaven and not fear forfeit of your rewards or blessings

v25: And You will also know from application of Bible Doctrine that your descendants will be prosperous and the pivot great and that the Human Race will continue on and be able to adjust to your death and the nation perpetuated and your spiritual offspring shall be as the grass or young shoots of the field from blessing by association and historical impact.

v26: You will come to your grave in full vigor at the peak of your life for the mature believer at the perfect time to die, like a shock of corn comes in its season as the Timing and Plan of God in Grace are perfect.

v27: Behold this doctrine of Death and Dying Grace, we have researched, investigated and studied it, having the principle and experience of it, this is the point of it, Hear, learn, inculcate into your soul and know it applying it for yourself for your own good.

1. Under short term pressure the believer is rescued by concentrated thinking under pressure when he pulls out the doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and uses it.
 - i. There are 6 categories of blessing and 6 of trouble.
2. Evil which is the satanic doctrine can reach into our soul and touch you UNLESS you are insulated by Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
3. The Cosmic Dynasphere offers many enticing ideas which can infiltrate your soul and totally off base and an attack on freedom.
 - i. Equality and the idea that all people are equal is absurd and we are not born, live or die equally
 - ii. WE are not equal in any way and no 2 of us have equal abilities in any way and the idea that you can legislate equality is absolutely STUPID.
 - iii. Freedom is vastly better than equality as it gives the opportunity through self determination to advance to the maximum of your ability or become a bum or hippie.
 - iv. Freedom gives opportunity to through self determination to take responsibility for your decisions and wind up with great inequalities in society.
 - v. There are no equalities in heaven as some believers use freedom for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and some to enter reversionism.
 - vi. In addition in heaven there will not be equality but also no embarrassment.
 - vii. The worst thing to do to any believer is to shame them into regular bible study as their motivation would be totally wrong.
4. The believer who goes all the way with Bible Doctrine will face troubles but also DISASTERS in life.
 - i. Evil is rejection of universal military training, welfare state function, socialism, government interference with industry, every bureaucracy we have, OSHA, judges in appeals courts turning loose a criminal and not executing them.
 - ii. We should go into every jail system today and take the top 10-15% of the criminals and shoot them down and leave them there and if any complaints occur shoot them too and tell all they are criminals and lucky to be alive.
 - iii. Criminals frankly know that the easiest person to con is a prison psychiatrist first pretending you are nutty as a fruit cake and then gradually let the guy talk you into snapping out of being nutty and he thinks he has caused you to respond textbook wise and the criminals discuss this among themselves and plan to do this

without rushing it and then get out and are again free to practice their chosen profession.

5. **Evil includes 4 great disasters: (in rational sequence)**

i. **Economic**

- a. **There must be some form of effective economic function where one can get a job and achieve and become wealthy and prosperous without government interference and without people who cannot make money and then try to run down big business**
- b. **The greatest thing to happen to his country was Big Business and the best thing which occurred after that was BIGGER and Bigger business and the greater the business the greater the prosperity.**
- c. **The friend of little business is big business NEVER the government which is the enemy of all free enterprise.**

ii. **Military**

- a. **Once you have a little prosperity there must be protection for it from a military from those who want it.**

iii. **Social**

- a. **Once you have freedom you can have social life and raise hell or have a pleasant date.**

iv. **Dying**

- a. **Each of us will die eventually and if you live by Bible Doctrine you will die by it and if you die in this way dying will be the frosting on the cake of life for you and greater than anything you ever had in life.**

v. **Disaster is the opportunity of God to demonstrate his GRACE for you.**

G. **Maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God or relationship with the Essence of God.**

1. Women in the military have to be handled like a soldier and when they break down emotionally they must be dismissed until they can act like a soldier.
2. When a woman becomes a soldier she must not be considered a female but only a soldier.
3. The woman in the military is a sign of degeneracy
4. We go to war to protect our ladies and motivated to fight and die for our ladies and our homes and defend it against enemies.
5. We want ladies on pedestals at home not complicating military life in trenches and barracks or wherever.
6. In Washington they are divorced from reality and trying to make a state of this system and the state of our nation and government is in total decline and almost on the brink of total destruction.
7. We live in the best time of all for there is the greatest challenge for thought and concentration and Bible Doctrine today in 2015-16 than at any other time in Human History.

H. **In War and military disaster we will be delivered.**

1. The professional soldier needs a total relationship with the Integrity of God, Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God..
2. Military integrity is useless under pressure unless related to divine integrity.
3. The protestant reformation caused a great revival in northern Germany and the Hohenzollern family and all the aristocracy of Prussians were strong on Bible Doctrine generation after generation and when they devised organized genius called the German general staff system they had 2 principles
 - i. The officers code
 - ii. A system of Bible Doctrine to which they rigidly adhered
 - iii. No until they were unified and let in other peoples in 1870 from other parts of Germany did they ever even being to depart from Bible Doctrine.

- iv. Some of the men of Bible Doctrine in that system of organized genius were men who made such great contributions to the great ability of the Germans.
 - v. Always fighting on 2 fronts against greater odds and doing a magnificent job.
 - vi. The battle of Tannenburg 1914 and Captain Paul Von Hoffman who was a strong believer with incredible doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
4. The power of battle of battle must be related to the Integrity of God otherwise you make a bum out of a good soldier.
- i. A good professional soldier must have something to which to anchor the tremendous things he endures in the abnormal circumstances of combat and barracks and garrison life
 - ii. There are long periods of monotony in garrison life followed by stimulating periods of combat and this requires understanding and to be properly motivated you must be man who can think and be honorable under the most admirable circumstances.
 - iii. There must be motivation from Bible Doctrine.
- I. Social Disasters:
1. This is the worst of all sins seen in Prov 6
 - i. 3 Mental
 - a.
 - ii. 3 Verbal
 - a. Gossip
 - b. Maligning
 - c. Judging
 - iii. 1 Overt
 - a. Murder taking life as a criminal and using violence to gain something thus removing another's ability to exercise volition.
 - b. Murder has nothing to do with the military this is not murder and the believer in service should be the best killer and cool and calm and well organized and not influenced by emotion and pick targets and get them down.
 - c. The believer under Filling of God the Holy Spirit should be the greatest soldier in the outfit and when it comes time to kill he should be the greatest killer of all.
 - d. Killing the enemy in battle is honorable in the sight of the Lord and not murder this erroneous idea is the result of socialism and idiocy and liberalism
 2. The worst thing which can happen in a church or any group is gossip or maligning or judging
 - i. Gossip is one of the greatest of all evils and everyone has a right to privacy.
 - ii. Gossip is a sin parlayed into evil
 - iii. This is social disaster and the worst is to be a victim of gossip, maligning and judging.
 3. You will not be afraid meaning you will not lose the ability to think under pressure and fulfill some system of protocol under pressure.
 - i. Courage is the ability to think and react and do something rather than freezing under pressure.
 - ii. Lack of courage is inability to think under pressure and functioning under emotion.
 4. Violent death is terrible painful death where you die only alone.
 - i. Death is a summary of your life.
 - ii. The ability to think during death is a reflection of your life.
 - iii. Dying with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the

- Soul results in living during dying with marvelous peace and strength in the soul.
5. Dying must not remove our sense of humor
 - i. Often people who discover that they are dying LOSE their sense of humor.
 - ii. The magnificent honorable death of Thomas Johnathan (Stonewall) Jackson who was a great mature believer.
 - iii. WE must all strive for this same quality of dying.
 - iv. We will all die and all from different causes and different situations and must die with character.
 - v. People screaming during crashes is very inconsiderate since it makes concentration on Bible Doctrine very difficult.
 - vi. When we die no matter the mechanics we will be absent from the body and face to face with the Lord.
 - vii. We have nothing to say about the means of our death and only can have the Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to rely on.
 - viii. From a Human Viewpoint it is a disaster from the Divine Viewpoint it is a capping on a life focused on Bible Doctrine.
 6. In battle neither the weapons of battle nor the conventional weapons of battle can remove us.
 - i. We have a Wall of Fire until the Lord decides to take us home.
 - ii. No instrument of death can remove the mature believer from this life only the Integrity of God can transfer the mature believer through a permanent change of station can transfer him from earth to heaven.
 - iii. Once the Lord calls a believer home all the power and ability of this world can retain him in this life.
 - iv. The believer cannot die until the Lord is ready to take him home and nothing can KILL the believer until the Lord is ready for him.
 - v. Too many people live in fear of everything which can cause dying and they lack capacity for life constantly trying to avoid anything which may cause death.
 - vi. **Cowards die many times the brave man only once.**
 7. Believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will die without pain and will receive his blessings and rewards in eternity.
 8. If you reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and die you leave behind a great heritage for your loved ones.
 - i. This is blessing by association with the mature believer.
 - ii. This is the exception to that if God does not promote you you are not promoted or blessed.
 - iii. This is why evil people prosper.
 9. We as a mature believer will die when we reach a full age, not an old age.
 - i. We will be called home when we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and complete our best advance into Super-Grace status of one category or another.
 - ii. The failed believer will die under the Sin Unto Death painfully horribly and when he reaches the other side he will also have no sorrow or pain.
 10. The mature believer moves from earth to heaven over the high golden bridge of blessing in dying.
 11. We must learn the doctrine for ourselves and inculcate it and apply it personally knowing it for our selves.
 - i. This is what makes us spiritually self sustaining.
 - ii. When we are in a jam we reach into our soul and pull out the Bible Doctrine that will sustain us.
 - iii. Our job our objective is to consistently take in Bible Doctrine to be able to handle our lives and decisions with the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

- iv. We will all die alone and individually and will rely on our own soul and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in it.
 - v. We must assimilate Bible Doctrine and be able to fly in this world ALONE on our own from Bible Doctrine.
 - vi. We must raise our children in this manner so that they can be independent in their life and function based on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
12. When we witness to others we must remember that they have free will and privacy and we must not force information on them and they must have their own motivation.
- i. We must “Learn it and know it for our selves”.
 - ii. We are in the biggest historical disaster this nation has ever imagined and with Metabolized Bible Doctrine we will know it for our selves and will have peace, prosperity, success and happiness in the pressures coming to this nation very soon now.
 - iii. We will not only be successful but may be the source of deliverance for this nation if the pivot is large enough and the spin off is small.
 - iv. If the pivot of mature believers is small and the spin off is large the country will be destroyed **AND WE WILL BE DELIVERED.**

Lesson #612 Series # 458 Matt 8:20- Dynamics for Disaster

- I. Solzhenitsyn Graduation Speech at Harvard University
- A. If an America suffering a defeat from a small communist half country how can the west stand firm in the future.
 - 1. When at a later date china with its billion people armed with American weapons would turn around American would fall prey to a genocide similar to the one in Cambodia in the 1970’s.
 - 2. By not clobbering the Vietcong and pulling out of Cambodia. we caused the systematic extermination of those people in Cambodia.
 - 3. No weapons no matter how powerful can help the west until it overcomes loss of will.
 - 4. In a state of psychological weakness weapons become a burden.
 - 5. To defend self one must be ready to die and there is little such readiness in this society raised in this cult of well being.
 - B. Western nations have cowardly leaders and a legal system which does not work and a shallow and all too powerful press.
 - 1. We are not a model for any nation coming out of communism.
 - 2. The decline in courage is the most striking feature which the outside observer notices in the west and we have lost our civil courage in all countries and the UN.
 - 3. Western thinking in nations has become conservative in a debilitating sense rather than a real sense.
 - C. Our presidents for a very long time whether Christian or not such as carter have been saturated with reversionism and more a traitor than Benedict Arnold.
- II. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is on the shore of the Sea of Tiberius which is subject to great storms and a great hazard to ships of all kinds even in modern times.
- A. A crowd is irrational emotional and incapable of thought it always falls apart in historical disaster
 - B. It destroys human freedom by
 - 1. Demanding equality
 - 2. Intruding into privacy
 - 3. Destroying Property
 - 4. Rejecting authority.
 - C. It becomes an evil instrument by succumbing to rumor and propaganda and victimized by any person who has propensities for power beyond his capacity.

1. Freedom is lost in a mob or crowd and every person who is a part of this is a slave to irrational and insane emotional behavior.
- D. If people are going to have capacity for life and glorify God and have prosperity imputed from the Justice of God to the resident Righteousness of God they must be separated from the irrationality and emotional stability of the crowd and put into a classroom.
1. The congregation must be under discipline to learn and separate self from the mob to learn.
- E. Authority is the key to freedom and to learn we must be under freedom of volition to choose to learn.
1. In life everything depends on the persons attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
 2. As an unbeliever attitude toward the doctrines of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
 3. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God attitude toward the realm of Bible Doctrine.
- F. Many believers in life are kept alive for the purpose of distracting you from Bible Doctrine and advance in the Spiritual Life.
1. They are friends or loved ones, parents, children, husband, wife, closest friends and they are here to test us to see if Bible Doctrine is Priority #1 or not.
- G. The pseudo intellectual is the scribe and many of those in our time who is full of hangups and arrogant and distorts Bible Doctrine into a system of rationalism and empiricism.
1. They are intelligent people without base in absolute truth and he was attracted to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ his intelligence
 2. These are always a liberal.
 3. The difference between radicals and liberals is IQ.
 4. Beneath the veneer of intellectualism is his emotional distraction
 5. When frustrated in any way in his plans or thinking he becomes excessively emotional and irrational.
 6. They seek more than anything else approbation of a crowd for emotional stimulation.
 7. They believe themselves equal to those whose thinking is based in absolute truth and they are arrogant and hung up and trying to prove something all the time.
 8. Arrogance blinds them to their true value which is 0.
 9. Arrogance and self centeredness causes these people to attach erroneous importance to their intellect and abilities and it has divorced them from reality.
 10. Being smart with quick perception they have the occupational hazard of Lack of common sense, disorientation to life and reality, arrogance, self centeredness and feeling of self importance and extremely self righteous.
 11. The liberal is an extremely self righteous person.
 12. They eventually become emotionally unstable and psychotic or neurotic.
- H. The scribe telling Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ that he would follow him anywhere is arrogant and unstable.
1. Arrogance and emotion out of control are the source of his sincerity and instability
 - i. Sincerity is not a virtue
 2. The emotional decision has no meaning and verbal or overt dedication means absolutely nothing in the Christian Way of Life and this merely expresses emotional reversionism, pseudo intellectuality and advertises you are trying to use someone else.
 3. This occurs in all organizations where people declare their total loyalty to the leader.
 4. This is the idiocy of public dedication and reaffirmation of faith.
 5. Reaffirmation of faith is blasphemous and Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is permanent and unchangeable and after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God rebound and Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 6. Surrendering to preach or missions is absolutely meaningless since you must learn some Bible Doctrine to know you have the gift and then it requires preparation with great

intensity and one shot dedication is meaningless.

7. Verbal dedication of all categories is no substitute for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
8. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ gave the command to depart and the scribe does not believe he will go.

III. The answer to this dropout, the pseudo intellectual:

- A. This category of person is never a crisis personality
 1. They cannot handle historical nor personal disaster
 2. He is without capacity for life in any way.
 3. He does not glorify Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and is a casualty before any battle begins.
- B. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ must immediately challenge this scribe who has challenged his authority
 1. Equality and freedom are antithetical
 2. Freedom is composed of privacy and property and an umbrella of authority.
 3. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has authority over this person and the whole universe since he is God and Humanity together.
 4. He is not equal to this man and this pseudo intellectual knows Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is smart and assumes they are equal.
 5. Equality destroys freedom and they are antithetical in every way.
- C. Freedom:
 1. The status of human volition and the uncaused cause of human function.
 - i. It is live and let live.
 - ii. It is legitimate self determination exemption from necessity and self fulfillment and self determination and the privilege and franchise of the Human Race.
 - iii. It is exemption from arbitrary control of false authority
 - iv. It is the basic concept.
 2. It is related to and an integral part of privacy
 - i. Privacy is the environment for freedom and this is why our soul is invisible immaterial and located in our cranium.
 3. Also a part of freedom is property legitimately acquired and possessed by an individual.
 - i. It includes the right to dispose of or use or enjoy or benefit from anything which can be subject to ownership of the individual.
 - ii. When we see people who own many things it is a sign of freedom and that we still live in somewhat of a free country.
 - iii. We have a right to possess and protect our property
 4. This is all under an umbrella of authority delegated by God.
 - i. This is to command, train to prepare for life, employ, to teach, to act as an agent for a principle whether nation, state or county or city etc.
- D. The principle is freedom and equality cannot coexist:
 1. Freedom cannot guarantee nor manufacture equality in the Human Race.
 - i. In fact it produces inequality
 - ii. Freedom has self determination and you can use Positive Volition to advance to a high state or Negative Volition to retrogress and thus there is no equality here or in heaven.
 2. Some use freedom to advance and some to retrogress under self determination.
 3. Freedom is reality equality is a myth.
 4. Freedom does not guarantee equality and the function of freedom guarantees inequality
 5. Equality is the device of the pseudo intellectual, arrogant, sociopath, the disoriented and freedom is the motivation of the grace oriented.
 - i. This scribe and all pseudo intellectuals are socialists when it suits them and they put themselves up to be equal to those with absolute truth as their base thinking.

6. Forced equality is tyranny
 - i. Not only is this the policy of tyrants but also Satan's eschatological Cosmic Dynasphere.
 - ii. Socialism, welfare, gun legislation, anti policy and subjectivity in law and anti military.
7. Freedom is the policy of God in the Human Race to resolve the Angelic Conflict.
8. Freedom is dogmatic and inflexible regarding the essentials of life while being flexible and pliable regarding the non essentials of life.
 - i. Freedom respect the opinions of others even though it is wrong and does not persecute that person for having a wrong opinion.
 - ii. While people do not agree with you having learned a lot of doctrine you don't have the right to persecute them even verbally because they are stupid or a smart arrogant pseudo intellectual.
 - iii. People have a right to their opinions and we may not like them but they have a right to them.
 - iv. There comes a time when freedom must be limited by authority
 - v. No one in this nation has any right to be a communist or socialist as it is totally incompatible with the constitution and freedom.
 - vi. Socialism and communism and welfare and fabianism and Marxism are all anti freedom and destructive to FREEDOM and our nation.
9. Freedom is both common sense and orientation to reality which includes respect for
 - i. Privacy including believers in church
 - ii. Property which is inviolate.
 - iii. Authority
10. Freedom must have content of thought from Bible Doctrine
 - i. This pseudo intellectual will not ever matriculate in the course of dynamics of disaster.
 - ii. Pseudo intellectuals are very destructive to freedom and think they have all the answers when in reality they have none.
 - iii. This scribe and all pseudo intellectuals are inflexible.
 - iv. Flexibility + Bible Doctrine is strength and flexibility minus Bible Doctrine is weakness as per the Royal Family Honor Code.
 - v. ***Flexibility without Bible Doctrine produces unhappiness, uncertainty and defeat.***
 - vi. Many people who are considered strong give up on patriotism and are ashamed of the nation because of failures with regard to policies regarding communist nations, illegal aliens, moslems, terrorists, criminals, etc etc etc.
 - vii. They, WE, must be just as strong as possible for the principles of freedom as ever before
 - viii. We cannot give up and withdraw and fall apart
 - ix. We have a lot of defeated people in this nation who are smart enough to realize the implications of the treaties with red china and Russia and realize the stupidity of illegal aliens and moslems in the country but are not strong enough in the soul to handle it.
 - x. This is why we must function under the Royal Family Honor Code with flexibility with regard to non essentials and inflexibility with regard to essentials of Bible Doctrine.
 - xi. Pseudo intellectuals are and always will be superficial intellectuals and under Divine Discipline until the Sin Unto Death and many believers in this category will be in heaven and their lives on earth are total failures.
 - xii. They will be like the scribe be casualties before historical disaster even gets here.
11. We must function under the concept that with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as savior as

life becomes worse relationship with the Lord becomes better.

- i. The contrast between better and worse gives an appreciation for what the Lord provides for us in Logistical Grace and Super-Grace A, B and Ultra Super-Grace.
- E. The pseudo intellectual will not face the truth from Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
1. He knows much in many areas and when it comes to doctrine he like all pseudo intellectuals resists Bible Doctrine and like Amenhotep II he however is a believer and builds Scar Tissue of the Soul and the greater the Scar Tissue of the Soul the greater the pressure and the greater the pressure the greater the arrogance and will hear truth even in simple terms and totally reject it.
 2. The fox has something that all pseudo intellectuals need
 3. This lowly animal never builds his own house and always steals someone else's house.
- F. The pseudo intellectual never builds a system but uses an existing system to advance self.
1. This country was not built by communists socialists nor constructed for welfare state function.
 2. College professors today as pseudo intellectuals enjoy freedom provided by military whom they generally despise
 3. They enjoy freedom our forefathers planned through the application of Bible Doctrine and enjoy freedom because Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History
 4. They steal like communists and socialists and US bureaucracies and government stealing from us in the welfare state function.
 5. The fox is crafty and smarter than others (Except the Coyote) and so smart and saves his energy for getting food and uses someone else's house.
 6. Thus the fox is the pseudo intellectual or a hippie or welfare recipient or illegal alien or moslem scum.
- G. We have built in the United States of America a magnificent nation through freedom
1. The communists of Russian and china and Cuba want it and even Mexico wants back the southern strip of the United States of America.
 2. They think that by taking this they will seize our prosperity and realizing that prosperity comes from freedom and thus as communists or socialists they cannot ever have it.
 3. This is the fox, the pseudo intellectual and college professor and wealthy communists in our nation.
 4. These people are pseudo intellectual and know a lot of things because of great perspicacity and know no truth.
 5. The most basic truth they reject is freedom the very spiritual issue of the Angelic Conflict.
- H. Principle:
1. In the day of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the fox differed from most canine types and always sniffed out a burrow usually built by badgers and took the home he built.
 - i. However if the badger came back the fox was driven out as the stable badger was able to whip him.
 - ii. All pseudo intellectuals are thieves and steal ideas and are academically dishonest
 - iii. All liberal professors are always academically dishonest.
 2. Foxes are regarded as insignificant and Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is comparing this great intellectual to the fox and by so doing is showing him that he will never as a believer will never accept the truth of Bible Doctrine unless he recognizes his own true significance and that is impossible since he is ARROGANT.
 - i. The fox is considered insignificant even though he has a home but he steals it
 - ii. This man as all pseudo intellectuals have homes and works his way through life as all liberals as a con artist in the field of ideas and distract from freedom
 - iii. Once you distract from freedom any system you set up is tyranny.
 3. Even though the fox is small and insignificant as an animal he has a home which he has gained not by strength nor ability but by being smarter than others and waits for others to

- build a lair and then he steals it.
- i. This is the welfare state and this state waits till free enterprise builds prosperity and then steals it.
 - ii. Our immoral government today in 2015 has for over 50 years been stealing prosperity from free enterprise
 - iii. They are stupid failing to realize that once you kill this goose there is no more golden eggs.
4. The scribe would like to be pious and regarded as spiritual but at the same time clings to human security
 - i. AS this man is being compared to a fox with a home Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is comparing self to nothing without any lair.
 - ii. He is also indicates his own perfect integrity and he would not steal.
 - iii. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was a true conservative not a pseudo conservative,.
 - iv. Anyone who is anti Semitic or in it to protect his own property from being involved in socialism is pseudo conservative.
 - v. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ did not have a home but something far greater in freedom.
 5. When there is a conflict between human security and the operation of the Plan of God the scribe switches from intellect to emotion and peals off.
 - i. This is related to his bluff.
 6. The scribe has already accepted human security systems for happiness and thus under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and distracted from the Plan of God.
 7. Emotion brings no strength for the crisis
 - i. Thus this scribe fails
 - ii. If Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ cannot offer more security than a fox has then human security orientation becomes distracted resulting in Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and reversionism and all resistance of Bible Doctrine thereafter,.
 - iii. The scribe has a low opinion of the fox and his chances for survival.
 - iv. Because survival and security are related he suddenly becomes emotionally unstable.
 - v. Security is the priority for the scribe and he loses the greatest system of security the world has ever known freedom to operate in the Plan of God Equation of Hope.
- I. The fox Distraction:
1. Emotional fervor and good intention is not equivalent to following Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and advancing in the Plan of God.
 - i. This scribe loses his momentum and motivation and gains emotional instability.
 2. This believer though a scholar and professor with high IQ and great perspicacity has failed to distinguish between the security of the Plan of God and human security
 - i. True security is freedom to learn Bible Doctrine and apply it.
 - ii. Human security is related to having a place to lay your head.
 3. Emotion destroys moral courage when it is controls the soul in Emotional Revolt of the Soul.
 - i. Not normal emotion responding to the intellect, emotion must respond to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul not control the soul.
 - ii. Thus this believer like so many others refuses to embark on the ship or matriculate in the course of doctrine.
 4. Emotion puts blessing before the doctrine but the Plan of God puts doctrine before blessing.
 - i. When you put emotion before doctrine there is nothing which you can ever have or attain or succeed at or no set of circumstances which can bring happiness and you will be miserable as long as you live putting emotion first.

- ii. With doctrine placed before emotion you will build capacity for life and happiness.
5. Believers emotions are not ever functioning properly until Bible Doctrine comes first.
6. The analogy between Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and the fox will turn away the scribe whose emotional zeal is meaningless because the analogy is really between the scribe and the fox and his inability to pass the small distraction called the security test.
 - i. The Lord took a pseudo intellectual and showed him what a true intellectual is.
 - ii. He compares himself with the fox in the sense of strength which is in his freedom.
 - iii. The scribes strength is in his pseudo intellectuality and his propensity to steal ideas and approbation.
 - iv. The scribe is the fox as a stealer of dens or is not as good as the fox having none of the accourdaments of societies human securities.
 - v. He brings self and the scribe to the fox showing that the scribe has the bad characteristics of the fox and the Lord making self lower than the fox is greater than the fox.
 - vi. NO MATTER HOW LOW YOU ARE IN LIFE IF YOU HAVE FREEDOM YOU ARE GREAT.
 - vii. Man has no dignity aside from this statement because man is inherently EVIL.
 - viii.
7. *Some will never make it because they cannot ever pass the security test and won't stay with Bible Doctrine and thus never make it in any crisis.*
 - i. *Human security is a distraction and in comes in many varied ways.*
 - ii. *Any time that human security is more important to us as a believer than Bible Doctrine or to the unbeliever than freedom we become as Esau selling our heritage for a mess of pottage.*
 - iii. *We as a nation have already done this.*
8. We cannot blame our leadership, president or congress but only ourselves and if we are destroyed by the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline in the near future we must remember that WE IN THE USA HAVE BEGGED FOR IT.
 - i. We must not be motivated for Bible Doctrine because of what it can bring by human security in any category.
 - ii. Bible Doctrine is our life and our freedom must be what we use to take in Bible Doctrine NOT the false motivation similar to the scribe.
9. Security consciousness and spurious emotion hinder learning and believing Bible Doctrine.
 - i. Command to depart and cross the sea is like acceptance of Bible Doctrine as epignosis.
 - ii. We learn Bible Doctrine as gnosis and then must accept it or reject it.
 - iii. Much doctrine appeals to pseudo intellectuals but they cannot accept it.
10. This man as the majority have done in this country has chosen security over freedom.
 - i. When you choose freedom you are under Positive Volition
 - ii. When you choose security you are under Negative Volition
 - iii. Freedom motivates to fight and die for this nation while security motivates to go on a student strike to ensure you don't go to Vietnam or other war areas.
 - iv. The cowards of Kent State University all should have been shot (ff) and all these have for motivation Security while heroes are motivated for freedom.
 - v. This test shows all pseudo intellectuals are yellow cowards and motivated for security and from arrogance to promote self and to hang on to what self has.
 - vi. They have no concept of freedom or proper motivation.
 - vii. We must return to universal military training and every male must serve and NO females in combat organizations but only as support.
11. This scribe is typical of the shallow and superficial believer who never has enough Bible

Doctrine to have right priorities in the Christian Way of Life and never can he face reality of a crisis and his spurious emotion divorces him from reality even in normal times.

- i. In crisis times he is totally wiped out.
- ii. Abnormal times take away security and if you don't have freedom or doctrine motivation you are immediately a casualty.

IV.

Lesson #613 Series # 458 Matt 8:20- Dynamics for Disaster

I. Our economy has been in a disaster for a long time.

- A. Big business is always what supports and expands small business.
 1. Big business is what brings prosperity to our nation and our government is trying to make us think it is small business and this is idiotic.
 2. Small business cannot provide prosperity and hires few and has small payrolls and cannot exist without big business.
 3. It is never the source of prosperity.
- B. In addition our government try to tell us constantly that when we seek peace and appeasement of other countries we are being lied to and will be in disaster faster than we can think.
 1. Our stand with regard to Israel has gotten worse and worse and is totally idiotic today.
 2. Arabs, Egyptians, MOSLEMS throughout the world, WHO or WHAT are they except insignificant.
 3. We as a client nation to God and are responsible for the safety of the Jews world wide.
 4. Our opening diplomatic relations with china and our catering to illegals and our allowing Syrian refugees into the is country is a great sell out of everything American.
 5. We are in reality on the brink of a great disaster in this nation.

II. The dropouts of Matt 8

- A. There are 3 categories of dropouts who are casualties before pressure begins and cannot live and function in normal times.
 1. Pseudo Intellectual the one who has High IQ and great perceptive ability and learn incredible things but never gets to the truth.
 - i. There is no root in truth for this group
 - ii. He goes from irrational to emotional and becomes neurotic and psychotic and totally falls apart.
 - iii. They reject truth related to Laws of Divine Establishment and God and thus builds Scar Tissue of the Soul and this builds greater and greater arrogance which brings instability and disaster.
 - iv. Spurious emotion divorces the pseudo intellectual from reality in normal times and thus cannot ever survive abnormal times of historical crisis.
 - v. We will have a crisis in history in our time most likely and will not survive it if we have not straightened our priorities.
 - vi. We must have self discipline and this must be parlayed into self determination and we must never be distracted by any Human Viewpoint system.
- B. The Bird People:
 1. Birds are weaker than land animals but having wings they have some level of security.
 2. **The fox is smart clever as is the scribe who would pass as a brilliant person in any group.**
 3. **Being smart but without contact with truth makes one unstable and emotionally smart.**
 4. **The smart emotion person is never able to cope with the reality of a catastrophe without roots in absolute truth of Laws of Divine Establishment or Bible Doctrine.**
 5. **Laws of Divine Establishment give the unbeliever truth to rely on and this gives these people patriotism.**
 6. **Many people call themselves patriots but when some catastrophe occurs and they become disenchanted with their country they give up.**

7. **Our country has made for decades a long series of disastrous decisions and actions but we must NEVER give up on the United States of America and must remain a patriot and never become disenchanted with the United States of America.**
8. **It is the people in government NOT the principles of our government who must be removed and our constitutional system restored for us to have our country back.**
9. **Pseudo intellectuals having no roots in truth or Bible Doctrine always give up on the nation and always fail to survive crises and disasters.**
10. The fox steals his burrow as his home from others so the scribe is smart also.
11. The fox has “security” until a more powerful creature is around to cause him to leave his home.
12. **Human security is challenged daily and proves insecurity and those who depend on human security are always insecure and inflexible about non essentials.**
13. **Human security is totally non essential for believers in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.**
14. **The most insecure people are those who depend on human security.**
15. **Take away this human security system for these people in disastrous situations and they are devastated.**
16. **People try to figure out how to be secure and try to anticipate disaster and what they can do about it.**
17. **The best preparation for disaster for believers are the inner resources of maximum Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.**
18. **When you get distracted during holidays by social gatherings you learn nothing and have no preparation for coming disaster.**
19. **Even normal perfectly legitimate things in life when they distract from Bible Doctrine or from concentration on Bible Doctrine they are the problem for your disaster preparation.**
20. **The concentration on learning Bible Doctrine is the same concentration you use when you apply Bible Doctrine.**
21. **When another person is shooting at you the same concentration by which you learned the principles of shoot is the same means by which you apply it.**
22. **Col. Jeff Cooper: “In a difficult pressure combat situation where someone is shooting at him he cannot go from condition white to condition red” HE IS THE EXPERT.**
 - i. **It is easy to go from white to yellow to orange to red but not ever from white to red and this is why people die in shootings.**
23. **We as believers in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ cannot Go from ignorance of Bible Doctrine to the pressure situation of disaster and come out surviving.**
24. **The pseudo intellectual is smart in perceptive ability with high IQ but STUPID where there is no Bible Doctrine interest and none in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and lives in condition white and never will survive disaster.**
25. **The foundation of shooting can be learned but they must be practiced over and over again.**
26. **These skills must be practiced over and over again daily and this is plugging along and also what we must do with Bible Doctrine and the pseudo intellectual will never do this.**
27. **The more human security conscience you are shows how insecure you are and our security comes from the what is in the soul not what is in the bank or any possession for any situation but what is in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.**
28. **If we are able to concentrate on the inner resources of our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul containing Metabolized Bible Doctrine we will avoid FEAR.**
29. **Fear comes from inability to concentrate.**

30. **People who have imagination can build for themselves FEAR.**
 31. **Nervous system reactions to situations is not fear but cowardice is the lack of ability to concentrate and think in pressure.**
 32. **Courage is concentration of the inner resources of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.**
 33. **This is a soldier who has learned to use his weapon and under pressure concentrates and shoots slowly and carefully and a man who learns to shoot on a range and concentrates in combat and carefully shoots.**
- C. The first area of collapse in any nation when communists arrive and attack are the college professors and pseudo intellectuals sympathetic with the enemy.
1. We lost the Vietnam war because of pseudo intellectuals and student demonstrations and pressure of people here to hold back the military services from doing their job.
 2. The long haired cowardly pseudo intellectual hippies have no roots in truth nor doctrine.
 3. Human security is a distraction to plugging it out with Bible Doctrine and concentrating on the intake of Bible Doctrine which is used in application as well.
- D. **OUR only security is in the Plan of God Equation of Hope.**
1. In X Radical we receive LIFE after birth from the Justice of God.
 - i. This is security but Life is often meaningless in tyranny and dictatorship and in any system which destroys freedom such as the welfare state.
 - ii. This welfare system sets up a tyrant not called Hitler or Stalin but it is EQUALITY.
 - iii. Equality always destroys freedom and God provides client nations with freedom.
 - iv. The Justice of God also gives us condemnation by imputation of Adam's Original Sin at birth so that we are never condemned by any sin we commit and thus because of this we never reach accountability we are automatically are taken to be with God.
 - v. This security has no money nor fortress nor weaponry and this is true security.
 - vi. We receive this and have a potential for salvation which depends on the 2nd imputation.
 - vii. This plus the doctrine of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and salvation is what is real security and we then can make our own decision to fulfill this potential.
 - viii. This is our FIRST Confidence in the Plan of God knowing that we will have salvation and Eternal Life if we express our volition with faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
 - ix. Not only is there confidence in all of X radical but there is overriding confidence from freedom and the Laws of Divine Establishment and privacy and property and overshadowing authority for stabilizing.
 - x. True security is found in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul when we understand establishment and freedom.
 2. In Y Radical we see the first judicial imputation of our sins to the eternal God in Hypostatic Union and then the judgment of them.
 - i. We are saved by faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ who died spiritually for our sins.
 - ii. Judicial imputation 2 sets up the potential and at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive all the security we ever will need and he gives to us Absolute Righteousness of God and this is ½ of the Integrity of God and there is no greater security.
 - iii. This provides us the 2nd potential of blessing in time and this is based on the imputation of the Righteousness of God to us because of the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross and this is a tactical victory when it is reality.

- iv. With the doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to a maximum level we WILL reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and WILL receive blessing in time and this is understood in absolute confidence.
 - v. We then have security in wealth or doctrine or any other thing God provides for us in blessing.
 - vi. We are secure in this radical by Logistical Grace provisions and we must fulfill our responsibility in work and living.
 - vii. Security is Always in what we THINK and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the reality of God against the reality of the Cosmic Dynasphere,.
3. In Z radical we have received Eternal Life at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Blessing in time given us at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and this is security.
- i. All of this comes from God and this is permanent and what is provided by God is not removed unless it is for our benefit.
 - ii. Having these gives us the potential and in fact confidence of receiving afortiori incredible blessing in eternity.

E. There is nothing in our security which in any way is brought to us by human efforts.

- 1. We receive soul life at physical birth imputed to our format soul and combined with our Biological Life to form Human Life when we die our soul life will always go on and we will always have soul life and this is SECURITY.
- 2. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive Eternal Life from God imputed to our regenerated Human Spirit and once given us there is nothing we nor even God can do us to change this or our soul life.
- 3. The secret to security is what we have in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and is the secret to life.
- 4. Not our possessions nor our authority (Louis XIV, Charles I, etc) being king or having power wealth or success does not bring security.

F. Principle of the bird distraction:

- 1. While the fox is analogous to the cleverness of the scribe the bird shows his prominence wealth and success
 - i. The scribe is smart and pseudo intellectual with high IQ and is brilliant like the fox.
 - ii. The bird shows his human success and he is wealthy and successful.
- 2. The bible must be interpreted in the time in which it was written.
 - i. Birds were hard to kill since they could fly away there were no shotguns.
- 3. The bird in the air was much safer than the fox on the ground and the nest of the bird offered more security than the den of the fox.
 - i. The original owner of the den might return and defeat the fox.
- 4. The bird represents the wealth and success and fame and approbation or Human Security which belonged to the scribe.
- 5. This scribe like all pseudo intellectuals in their area are famous wealthy and secure in their success and were not inclined to leave his place of prominence and comforts of his residence for the unknown circumstances and discomfort across the sea.
 - i. He did not embark and was a dropout and did not take the course on disaster dynamics.
- 6. The scribe is clever like the fox and secure like the bird in the air but is still depending on straws and has no foundation on rock but only on sand.
 - i. He represents to us in this study the true believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ who will not depart from conventional comfort of society for unseen benefits of growth and grace for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine

- ii. It is too inconvenient to do bible study with any consistency and it is difficult to be wide awake and alert and the day may be hard and we may be tired and may yawn or fall asleep but there is one thing we must learn.
 - iii. We must be consistent and regular in our Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - iv. The secret to anything you do is to do it consistently every day.
 - v. If all you do is run around the house for exercise then you must do it every day.
 - vi. There is incredible importance in daily intake of Bible Doctrine and our persistence in it again and again.
 - vii. There are for us available 11-15,000 hours of bible studies for our continued Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and RB Thieme III is consistently teaching 4 days per week currently so that bible doctrine is there we must simply make an effort to get it.
 - viii. In the coming crisis we may be great heroes because because from our own free will self determination and priority of having Bible Doctrine first we will make it.
 - ix. We not only come but concentration and this concentration will be used in application.
7. A believer who clings tenaciously to the visible conventional pleasures of life and security and refuses doctrine which provides the very meaning and purpose of blessing and happiness NEVER passes the crisis test.
8. The believer who clings to the conventional accourdaments of success and happiness is never prepared for historical crisis and disaster.
- i. Such as believer discovers too late that everything he has associated with happiness and security is taken from him and this is a part of disaster.
 - ii. With all things gone he collapses and panics and is hysterical and usually dies horribly and miserably without ever finding out the true meaning of life as per Equation of Hope Plan of God.
- G. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has all his security based on thought of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 1. The true issue is not having a place to lay your head but having something in your head when you lay it down.
 - 2. It is not whether you have a pillow or stone it is what is in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in the head.
 - 3. The pseudo intellectual will never understand this and he must be dealt with in terms of his own thought of security.
 - 4. The Humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is in view here not the deity which does not even have a head to place anywhere.
- H. Principle:
- 1. Occupation with human security and uncertainty with the future causes Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine which destroys the believer before historical crisis occurs.
 - i. If you are destroyed or neutralized before you cannot endure in crisis.
 - 2. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ places importance on the head where the soul and though is located.
 - i. He does not say there is not place for him to sleep.
 - ii. Too many believers are defeated by the uncertainty of NORMAL times.
 - iii. Are you going to be alive tomorrow??
 - iv. Believers defeated by the uncertainty of normal times will totally collapse in disaster.
 - 3. The scribe with is his superficial scholarship and pseudo intellectualism, his dominating spurious emotion and human security orientation and lack of Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) function have all combined in his life to distract him
 - i. As the distracted disciple he will never make it to Maturity Adjustment to the

Justice of God

4. He will never advance to live out his life and glorify the Lord but continue it in Divine Discipline and misery and failure and die the Sin Unto Death and then be in heaven in inequality.
5. His only function at this time is to act as a test for his friends who are under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and he will form a cadre of aggressors for the FTX of life.
 - i. These Positive Volition believers will have at least one distraction test from a sweet charming lovely believer who they admire and this person as a reversionist will be used to distract them.
 - ii. When they pass this test they will move into adolescence.
 - iii. These are believers and God keeps reversionists alive to try to distract and ambush believers who have Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine.
 - iv. One test will be in adolescence and before going into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and after as you enter Super-Grace B and moving ahead you will have the greatest test of all.
 - v. NOTHING must ever be more important to us than Bible Doctrine.

I. Principle:

1. The scribe is a type of believer who because of his arrogance and cleverness is impressed with the superficialities of life such as approbation from large crowds and powerful speakers.
 - i. Teaching and popularity of Christ, Jesus have attracted him and he is even a believer but pseudo intellectuals no matter how smart or brilliant their discourse they have no roots in truth nor any true orientation to reality.
2. The importance of Bible Doctrine eluded him in his pursuit of the superficial emotion and intellectual.
3. His motivation was erroneous and never caught the importance of Bible Doctrine from the ministry of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
4. Without Bible Doctrine he was not qualified to face personal adversity nor historical disaster.
5. The impulsive emotional believer does not have the either the motivation nor momentum to persist in his concentration on Bible Doctrine.
 - i. He can do it occasionally or sometimes when in a jam.
 - ii. The principle of the Plan of God becomes abstruse.
6. Transient emotion and temporary impulse distract from the true purpose of the Plan of God, the advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and imputation of blessing from the Justice of God.
7. Dedication without Bible Doctrine enthusiasm without Bible Doctrine destroys momentum in the Christian Way of Life.
8. The scribe was not rejected by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ but permitted to use his own volition to make the decision which was obvious that he would not go.
9. Emotion and enthusiasm has no carrying power in the Christian Way of Life.

J. Summary:

1. The fox was clever and the bird was secure the Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ takes the analogy to himself and in reality construed it as analogy to the scribe.
2. The fox was clever like the scribe and bird secure like the scribe but these were shallow based on impulse and emotion
 - i. He was security conscious and emotional and unstable.
3. His security was shallow based on human standards and functions.
4. Neither would provide the scribe with what he wanted in life and both would bring delusions of grandeur neither security nor power.
5. His cleverness produced arrogance while his human security produced complacency and both destroyed his capacity for life and adversity.

- i. His emotion is like a tumble weed which blows away in the dust of the wind storm with no ruler or authority nor help nor strength nor power from Bible Doctrine.

Matt 8:20-

v20: And Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, replied to him, the pseudo intellectual scribe, "The Foxes possess a den, lair or burrow not his own which he steals from someone else who built it, and birds of the skies, weaker than land animals but with wings are secure, have roosting dwelling places; but in contrast the perfect adult Son of man (Adam before sin) has nowhere or no place to recline his head if he wants to."

Lesson #614 Series # 458 Matt 8:21- Dynamics for Disaster

- I. Fear is lack of thought and lack of concentration in time of crisis Prov 23:7
 - A. You are what you think as an individual with capacity for thought and your possession of a soul.
 - B. Since World War II we have been declining in thought as individuals and a nation manifest destiny has become degeneration.
 - C. The liberal divorced from reality keeps crying peace peace when there is no peace.
 - D. We have lost perspective as a nation and our priorities as individuals in this nation.
 - E. We have allowed our national integrity and freedom to be compromised by permitting rearmament of Russian and Chinese and Korean and Iranian communism and islam and have allow the invasion quietly of millions of illegals of all nations into our borders.
 - F. In our thinking we have become a 2nd class power so that in historical reality we are a 2nd class power.
 - G. We know all freedom comes from military victory and all freedom for us has been purchased on battlefields where blood of our military men has been shed so that we have privilege to being evangelized and coming to church and growing in grace and knowledge of our Lord and savior Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ..
 - H. Freedom is a principle of Bible Doctrine and the invention of God so that the Human Race can fulfill its divine purpose and destiny in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict.
 - I. Freedom must be divined in terms of Privacy, Property and Authority
 - J. Liberalism produces arrogance which assumes the prerogatives of God and destroys freedom with the ploy called equality.
 - K. Our greatest problem in this county is that freedom and equality cannot coexist and equality is the enemy of freedom.
 - L. Freedom has as it basis Privacy, property and umbrella of authority.
 - M. Equality is a system of conquest and the development of tyranny.
 - N. We are free as believers to advance by Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine or be under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and enter reversionism.
 - O. There is thus as a result of true freedom in both time and eternity great inequality on earth and in heaven.
 - P. Equality is a way to destroy freedom and is a myth and freedom is a reality as an invention of God.
 - Q. We ignoring this fact puts us on the brink of a great national crisis.
 - R. Our government has been for decades infected by the insanity of Marxist socialism, welfare, destruction of human self determination by islamic political correctness and many other anti biblical and anti God concepts and principles.
 - S. The basis for our prosperity is and always has been Big Business free enterprise, and not government control of business.
 - T. Some of the manifestations of our national insanity include
 - 1. Graduated Income tax not 10% across the board,
 - 2. Attitude toward Rhodesia and South Africa in the 70's
 - 3. Attitude toward China
 - 4. Attitude toward Russia
 - 5. Attitude toward ISRAEL
 - 6. Weakness toward Iran today

7. Weakness with regard to criminals
8. Weakness with regard to illegal aliens
9. Weakness with regard to terrorist supporting countries
10. OSHA, EPA BATFE, Bureaucracies in general
11. Decline of the military and cancellation of the B1 and using military for social experiments
12. Rise of the cults
13. Holly rollers
14. Gun legislation
15. Insanity of attitude toward police and military
16. Allowing an illegal president to continue to make executive order laws without judicial or legislative interaction.
17. and many many other areas.

U. Review Matthew 8:18-

II. The 2nd distracted dropout disciple:

A. There are 3 categories of dropouts in this situation

1. The Baby Believer with just a little Bible Doctrine after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is the pseudo intellectual scribe.
2. The adolescent believer with more Bible Doctrine and respect for the teaching and authority of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
3. The mature believer.
4. None of these are able to cope with disaster but in heaven with all others.

B. They will never matriculate in the dynamics for disaster and failed before the disaster occurred

C. The protocol disciple, the Adolescent Disciple:

1. This believer does not handle catastrophes and disasters of life either personal nor collective.
2. This believer is a student under authority and depending on the authority of the teacher, here, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
3. This student knows enough to come to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and NOT say Professor thinking he was EQUAL with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as did the pseudo intellectual.
 - i. All pseudo intellectuals think they are as smart as whoever is the person of greatest intelligence.
 - ii. They do this because of build up of Scar Tissue of the Soul from Negative Volition to truth and this results in arrogance and the greater arrogance divorces them from reality.
4. This student understands that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is God and is God man in Hypostatic Union and purpose of the first advent and has some doctrine and some spiritual growth.
5. The pseudo intellectual called Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ Professor while This student calls him Lord
 - i. The one who calls him professor is ARROGANT
 - a. The first dropout could not ever learn enough Bible Doctrine to be more than a baby believer because arrogance rejects the authority of the teacher.
 - b. All arrogant pseudo intellectuals are eclectic and choose what they like and set themselves up as the absolute authority in any field of intellectual endeavor.
 - c. They always become irrational and emotional since arrogance divorces them from reality and as they are more divorced from reality they switch to function under emotion.
 - d. He said to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ he would follow him wherever he would go IF he would go and impugned the motives he had on Jesus of

Nazareth, The Christ.

- e. He would never leave a big crowd.
6. Arrogant pseudo intellectuals are the major reason we in the United States of America are begging to be destroyed and this is worse in the 21st century
 - i. Our leadership is pitiful in all areas but cannot be blamed totally
 - ii. We must look at ourselves and our whole system of thinking today is at fault.
 - iii. We have allowed the system of liberal thinking to filter into all areas of culture and liberalism is pseudo intellectualism.
 - iv. Pseudo Intellectualism means smart people with high IQ who have been educated them beyond their capacity into greater ignorance and have no roots in truth at all and accept lies into their souls by creating a vacuum in the soul and are blinded to reality and DEMAND to be destroyed.
 - v. Liberalism is a great great evil in every sense of the word and we demand destruction and it is anti Christian and anti God to the core
 - vi. With his function of Human Good the liberal sets himself up as God and names his pet projects as the panacea of life and problems.
 - vii. When he his frustrated in these things he turns to his emotion and becomes more irrational and this divorces him more and more from reality
 - viii. Our nation is saturated with people that are emotionally irrational and blind to the fact that communism in Russia and china and also islam is focused on our destruction.
 - ix. We are saying in effect that communism and even islam are good things and we condone violence and both are satanic evil murderous systems of tyranny.
 - x. We are a nation of liberals confused the principles of human good relating to evil.
7. This 2nd dropout believer has had and learned some doctrine and had a lot of teaching
 - i. Believers who have had a little but not enough teaching of Bible Doctrine are always in trouble and to know a little and assume it is a lot is to destroy self.
 - ii. You must persist in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine
 - iii. Knowing a little has the same problem as knowing nothing and creates arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - iv. The person who knows a little and stops learning and assumes it is a lot and this is less than a little if this attitude persists because this is built up arrogance of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - v. The first disciple recognized Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as professor because he was impressed with the sermon on the mount.
 - vi. This 2nd believer recognized Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as God having learned more Bible Doctrine than the first but he is however very concerned with what people think of him and this would be his major problem.
 - vii. He might be classified as the protocol or conventional disciple.
8. Many believers never realize that they don't have to conform to what society expects from people
 - i. We must conform to law but not to what people think.
 - ii. Many believer males wear long hair and earrings because others do instead of persisting in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
9. Conformity to the regulations of society is more important to this 2nd dropout and most believers than persistence in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. Here we have a funeral and the attitude then is the same as that today.
 - ii. If you miss your fathers funeral today or then you are a terrible person.
 - iii. The society is full of protocol in the fundamentalist circles and even in religious

- circles and we are loaded down with these protocol believers who cannot cut it in historical disaster.
10. Where protocol of society is concerned this type of believer is inflexible.
 - i. Protocol of society demands flexibility not inflexibility because Society is essentially a NON ESSENTIAL and their protocol is not important and flexibility is important.
 - ii. Traditional observance of a funeral or other societal protocols is of greater importance for this type of believer than the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - iii. Today these believers follow patterns of morality and legalism and this is the majority of believer who cannot make it in historical disaster.
 - iv. For these believers Conformity to the customs of society are more important than obedience to the command of God.
 - v. These persons put family before the lord but Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ made it very clear that Bible Doctrine must be first.
 - vi. Families are wonderful things and it is great to have a good relationship with family
 - vii. When the essential of function for the believer is Bible Doctrine the only basis for spiritual growth then family becomes a non essential along with many other things in life regarded as important.
 - viii. About the essential of Bible Doctrine we must be totally inflexible while we must be totally flexible about family a non essential.
 - ix. When you get together with family you need flexibility and the more Bible Doctrine you learn and the other members of the family know nothing the more you need to understand that loving family includes Impersonal Love as well as Personal Love and this means tolerate their silly ideas
 - x. Don't make some dogmatic statement when they are having turkey dinner so that they choke on it.
 - xi. Not personal love toward family but Impersonal Love because no matter what concepts they come up with every year even in prayer we must be flexible about them.
 - xii. We being anxious for them to know what we know that we often become obnoxious and inflexible about their attitudes.
 11. Doctrine must come first
 - i. If anything in life comes before Bible Doctrine then you are not prepared for historical crisis and disaster.
 - ii. If family comes first then you are not prepared
 - iii. Recognizing Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as Lord means putting Bible Doctrine first in our scale of values
 - iv. This type of believer calls Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as Lord because of protocol and recognizes that this is proper but does not call him Lord in recognition of his authority but because it is the correct thing to say.
 - v. These are influenced more by what people think rather than what Bible Doctrine says.
 - vi. Public opinion is more important than personal opinion based on Bible Doctrine and this person cannot ever survive any disaster.

Matt 10:34-39

v34: "Do not begin to presume that I have come in the 1st advent to hurl or thrust peace upon the world; I have not come to hurl thrust peace but to thrust or hurl a machira sword among you which splits and divides and separates and causes antagonism.

v35: For I have come in the 1st advent, to to turn a person against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law;

v36: And A man's enemies are the members of his own household or family;

v37: When anyone loves father or mother more than the sword of Bible Doctrine or Me, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, is not worthy of me, the one loving son or daughter more than the sword of Bible Doctrine, or me, he is not worthy of me,

v38: And he who does not pick up his cross putting Bible Doctrine first, going against social tradition and or severing family ties and follow after me through the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, is not worthy of me.

v39: The one having made intellectual discovery of his soul or gains doctrine in his soul through the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception thus developing capacity for life from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, will progressively destroy or nullify your old soul and scale of values for details of life, and one having voided or canceled his old scale of values in his soul for my sake will discover it by developing capacity for life.

12. The quote of “Peace on earth and good will to men” is a mistranslation and should be “Prosperity to men of good or Positive Volition”
 - i. He has come in the first advent to bring antagonism and challenge the scale of values you have
 - ii. He says in effect “Am I more important than all of these things” and many say yes
 - iii. Then he says “I am on earth for 33 years and am leaving my thinking behind in the guise of the word of god” 1Cor 2:16 “and if you really mean this then it will be Bible Doctrine before anything else in life”.
 - iv. This is difficult for people to understand because the sweet and lowly Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and turning the other cheek does not seem to fit into this.
 - v. We must understand that the 1st advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is an invasion into Satan’s kingdom to divide people
 - vi. This division includes the close ties of family relationships and the cross and Bible Doctrine will always divide people and you must choose between Bible Doctrine and what others think.
 - vii. Even the most loving and intimate relationships of life as in v35 Bible Doctrine will divide people.
 - viii. Family schism comes from variations of attitude toward Bible Doctrine and as well as content of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul or lack of it.
 - ix. Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul causes strong love for family and greater capacity for love.
 - x. The greatest issue in life is always Bible Doctrine vs all details of life
 - a. Family
 - b. Friends
 - c. Loved ones
 - d. Social life
 - e. Sex
 - f. Status symbols\
 - xi. Any distraction to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is a detail of life about which one must exercise great flexibility
 - xii. About Bible Doctrine the believer must be indefatigable as well as persistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization
 - xiii. Bible Doctrine is motivation and momentum for fulfillment of the Plan of God and this type of believer is distracted by family responsibility and protocol of society.
13. The believer must severe any intimate relationship to put doctrine first
 - i. This is overcoming distractions in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and in Rome carrying a cross was a disgrace and condemnation.
 - ii. The believers not willing to pick up his cross and follow Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is distracted

- iii. This type of believer will attend his fathers funeral instead of following Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ so as not to offend public opinion
 - iv. His father is in heaven or hell and he can remember him with great love right were he is and does not have to attend the funeral.
 - v. This believer does not have to leave for the funeral and Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ knew this and he makes an issue of it.
 - vi. The finest protocol of life cannot replace the value of Bible Doctrine
 - vii. If the funeral and Bible Doctrine are on the line together Bible Doctrine must come first and there is honor and integrity in a funeral but we can still have fond memories about the one departed without attending any funeral.
14. This is what brings capacity for life and happiness and ability to handle historical disaster when Bible Doctrine is first.
- D. This disciple recognizes the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and asked permission to leave.
- 1. He was sure he would get permission
 - i. It is a good request or excuse even honorable but in this case conflicts with a higher calling.
 - ii. This does not mean we fail the Lord if we attend funerals.
 - iii. The issue is a conflict between protocol of society and the perception of Bible Doctrine.
 - 2. He actually regarded the permission to already be granted and to him it was a mere formality to ask for it.
 - i. He was so sure that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ would grant leave he used the NOMIC AORIST tense.
 - ii. He assumed NO ONE ever would say no to this request.
 - 3. This funeral for this believer was a greater priority than going across the sea and following Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
 - i. This disciple is so sure that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ will say yes that he is going through the formality of request and does not want to leave the Lord with him thinking ill of him.
 - ii. He shows deference and respect but also shows great arrogance.
 - iii. As an arrogant people he is very sensitive to public opinion and he must get to the funeral because of what people would think but cannot leave Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ thinking ill of him.
 - iv. We know many people spending their whole life bending this way and that to make sure everyone thinks well of them.
 - v. They are divorced from reality and you cannot go through life having everyone think well of Yours truly,
 - vi. You cannot spend the rest of your life falling apart because someone dislikes you.
 - vii. If you are disturbed because someone does not like you you are not living life as unto the Lord and will never have happiness nor understand the Christian Way of Life.
 - viii. This type of person has as a guide for his life to do nothing to offend others and if you do offend then bend over backward to change your lifestyle so these will like you.
 - ix. You cannot spend life being sensitive to public opinion and at the sophomore stage of your life you will become sensitive to the Lord and Bible Doctrine and what his desire is and this must be Priority #1.
 - 4. This is the wrong priority for this believer.
 - i. He is a sophomore believer but does not have enough Bible Doctrine to be straight.
 - ii. This believer who loves his father does not realize that his love will increase if he

learns Bible Doctrine.

E. Principles:

1. This disciple became entangled with and distracted by public opinion and the protocol of society
2. If he failed to attend the funeral of his father society would not understand and ostracize
 - i. Ignorance is the basis for function in society.
3. This believer thinks more of approbation of people than approbation of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
 - i. This is because he is sweet and humble and nice but with his own type of raging arrogance.
4. As long as there is no conflict it is convenient to follow the lord but now a conflict exists it is inconvenient
 - i. The protocol believer is always destroyed by inconvenience of learning Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. This believer has some Bible Doctrine but not enough to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and does not understand perseverance in Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
5. He lives out his life under Divine Discipline for reversionism and lives and dies the Sin Unto Death in Y Radical.

F. The father is dead and the son cannot help a dead father.

1. In life we make our decisions regarding eternity by our attitude toward Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
2. If the father is a believer he would be absent from the body and face to face with the lord and be in heaven.
3. If he was an unbeliever there is nothing that can be done with regard to the Lake of Fire forever for him.
4. The son could go to the funeral and provide some information with regard to the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ but Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ knows that there is no Positive Volition at the funeral and no one will ever receive Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as savior and no one left to comfort.
5. The only thing the son can do by attending the funeral is to satisfy the protocol of society
6. Public opinion and opinion of society is more important to most believers than the obedience to the commands of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and persistence in Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
7. This disciple has enough Bible Doctrine to present the gospel this is not the answer and what Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ says to him is continued in Luke 9:60
8. This man is already a preacher and has already been out serving Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as a sophomore minister and his job is to preach
9. If there was any Positive Volition at the funeral then Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ would have sent him there than told him to join him.
10. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ wants him to preach but not at the funeral and he is more concerned about what people think of him.
11. As a Pastor Teacher you must not be concerned about what people think.
12. You cannot be insensitive to the needs of people nor be thoughtless but not Pastor Teacher or evangelist must never be concerned about what people think but keep on in his ministry.
13. This disciple like many today seems to be ashamed that his friends may discover he is a believer even though he is preaching and does not have the moral courage to face condemnation from society.
14. He lives in Y radical but will never make it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the pressure of society will be a permanent distraction and will never be able to face historical crisis and disaster.

- G. The question is ARE YOU A DISTRACTED BELIEVER.
1. We must recognize that the most valuable thing in life is the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 2. It is our source of happiness and prosperity and blessing and capacity for all of this and life and love and also your ability to handle any pressure or disaster in life.
 3. No disaster is too great for the resources of Bible Doctrine.
 4. As a preacher this man became more concerned by what people thought of him than Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 5. **Considering our nation in 2015-16 at any time we may have the last opportunity in our life to get Bible Doctrine on a regular daily basis.**
 6. **We must be persistent and consistent as much as possible to get doctrine before the crisis occurs and before the disaster starts.**
 7. **With Bible Doctrine first in our life we will have a great life and holidays will be great if you don't this is the beginning of the end as historical disaster is almost upon us and when it comes only the resources of Bible Doctrine will count for anything.**
 8. **If you have not been faithful in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine you will not have any good in life.**
 9. **Without Bible Doctrine you don't have capacity for life and happiness and what is worse you have no capacity for the disaster which is upon us now.**

Lesson #615 Series # 458 Matt 8:22- Dynamics for Disaster

- I. **Lance Sijon: Shot Down in Vietnam dragged himself through the Jungle for 45 days. Died in Hanoi Prison and was awarded the Medal of Honor Posthumously.**
- A. **He constantly and continuously resisted and tried to kill the enemy even in prison**
 - B. **His freedom was the most important inner resource of his soul and he fought for it above all else.**
 - C. We as believers may have the opportunity to demonstrate that the greatest thing in life is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and far greater than any wealth, success or promotion or anything else.
- II. The Answer of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ to the The Protocol Believer dropout:
- A. There is a contrast here between the question and answer and the answer was short and to the point so that this man knew by leaving for the funeral he was rejecting Bible Doctrine and resisting the authority of the Lord and not be prepared for the disaster to come.
 - B. We can only follow the Lord through persistence in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and never through procrastination or distraction.
 1. Following the Lord has no connotation and does not mean being nice or turn the other cheek or fuss over them calling it nice and is not asceticism and has nothing to do with any action or works
 2. This is a command for mental discipline and consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 3. This command is to avoid distraction and there is no way to avoid distraction unless your have proper priorities and they precede the protocols of life
 - C. When Bible Doctrine is the issue nothing else is important if you are a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
 1. For unbeliever the only issue is attitude toward Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
 2. As a believer even the air you breath is not as important as the Bible Doctrine you have learned.
 3. This is separation in the mind not permission or toleration.
 4. This man is not to attend the funeral.
 5. If this man goes to his fathers funeral which is a legitimate, moral, correct, honorable thing to do he has a problem.

6. His problem is that for his whole life he has catered to what society thinks and has been a protocol personality and lives under the dictates of what society wants.
 7. Now the Lord has put t his issue before him so that which ever way he goes he is doing something good, right, honorable thing.
 8. The problem he is facing is much more subtle than the pseudo intellectual and he is facing Good vs good.
 9. The question is which of the 2 good things should have priority and he cannot do both simultaneously and must choose one or the other.
 10. This test causes many believers to peel off and leave Bible Doctrine forever and enter a life of reversionism with warning, intensive and then dying Divine Discipline and being alive only as a test for other believers.
 11. There is time to concentrate on Bible Doctrine and for him that time is NOW.
- D. This seems to be cruel and harsh but remember **in the pressure of crisis when it is our turn to face personal disaster and of our nation to face the greatest historical disaster of all our 200+ years of national life and when we are under great pressure in crisis or disaster loved ones cannot help no matter how close they are or wonderful the relationship.**
1. **Saving your money for a rainy day brings you to the rainy day not knowing what to do.**
 2. This believer loved his father who was a believer apparently but there is nothing his father can do for him now being DEAD.
 3. This man has doctrine but not enough and may have leaned too hard on his father but his father did not pass on enough Bible Doctrine to him and he wants to go to his father and even though he has doctrine it is not enough.
 4. What he can learn going with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ will make or break him for life.
 5. ***We must put our first priority on Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and must depend always on the inner resources of Bible Doctrine.***
 6. ***The best thing you can do for your children is to make sure that they have Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and this will be the foundation of their very personality.***
 7. ***Often men want to leave a better world for the children and all you can really do is leave them the best of this world which is Bible Doctrine.***
 8. ***We must do things for our children when the need arises and the need is and always will be Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.***
 9. ***There is no substitute for it in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and no substitute for making it available.***
 10. ***Arrogance blinds many believers and we must realize that the only hope for any of our children is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as a foundational resource of our soul.***
 11. **If we have children who completely fail in life we must blame ourselves especially if we let them get into one of the service organizations and these will never give anyone enough Bible Doctrine to face disaster.**
 12. Children must get Bible Doctrine daily over and over at their personal level.
 13. Children must be taught this doctrine under a system of academic discipline at their level.
- E. The separation from family is essential when there is a higher priority of Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
1. We are to allow society to continue normal functions such as funerals without criticism or maligning.
 2. Funerals moral, good and honorable and are not in conflict today and will not distract you but maybe family or friends who come to visit may distract you.
 3. Even good things in life when they conflict with Bible Doctrine they must be set aside.
 4. When we look back we can all see the importance of Bible Doctrine for the children and

- the importance of training them at their level.
5. There is no substitute for academic discipline in the classroom learning Bible Doctrine at their level.
 6. This is the ONLY answer and only hope for them to prepare them for crisis and historical disaster and people in general.
- F. This is a command to let society continue its normal function but we are not to allow the normal function of society to interfere with Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
1. Nothing should let the functions of society interfere with society even honorable things of society
 2. When there is conflict between the honorable function of society and the honorable Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine the Bible Doctrine must take precedence.
- G. Principle:
1. The legitimate function of society must never distract the believer from learning Bible Doctrine.
 - i. Society has a right to its legitimate function and the teaching of Bible Doctrine in a free society is permissible.
 - ii. These are 2 noble things and we must choose from these 2 when we have a protocol responsibility and responsibility to the Lord.
 2. It might be pointed out that society frowns on those who do not attend the funeral of their friends or loved ones
 - i. By not attending the funeral you are under the disapprobation of society and it often can be placed in such a way as we must decide which we prefer, disapprobation of God or society.
 - ii. It seems simple if we have some doctrine and would choose God over society but this is not the pressure of society
 - iii. This funeral is simply one of many protocol functions
 - a. If we have guests did we leave them home or go to bible class.
 3. Remember while attending some form of society protocol is legitimate and is not sinful, evil nor dishonorable these normal pleasures of society can often conflict with teaching of Bible Doctrine and thus be a distraction to learning Bible Doctrine.
 - i. This results in loss of momentum in the Spiritual Life.
 4. **In a time of great personal or national or historical crises or disasters all the good times do not carry you.**
 - i. **No matter how great our good times are or have been when we face any great pressure or crisis in life we will not draw on a party for inner resources to handle the problem.**
 - ii. **When someone is shooting at you there is no music in the background and it is real and the pressure is there and people are screaming and dying and the noise is terrible and as you move through it you don't think of the last party or your favorite girl.**
 - iii. **It is only the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which will provide stability in crisis for us.**
 - iv. **There is nothing wrong with having a good time but this is only a demonstration of your capacity for life and love and happiness but it will not carry you in disaster.**
 - v. **The source of your good times, capacity for life and ability to be a great love and enjoy social interaction is Bible Doctrine and this same Bible Doctrine is the source of courage, and integrity and honorable function in disaster.**
 - vi. **The doctrine must NEVER be neglected.**
 5. There is no substitute for Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of

the Soul and it will carry you in normal times and make you a crisis personality in abnormal times.

6. Legitimate and inspirational pleasures will never sustain the believer in any crisis.
 - i. Fun is fun while it lasts but will never carry you through a crisis.
7. Pleasures are a legitimate manifestation of life and we are not to renounce our personal pleasures of life.
 - i. Partying and social life is legitimate and is often a manifestation of capacity for life from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - ii. It is however the doctrine which sustains in adversity NOT the pleasures.
8. When our most precious loved ones die it is not the great memories we have which will sustain us it is only the Metabolized Bible Doctrine which we have which will sustain us in the loss we have sustained.
9. The pleasure and entertainment of life is not forbidden but when it conflict with Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine no matter how harmless or honorable or stimulating it will drag you down in time of historical disaster.
10. A funeral is not a pleasure but it falls into this category being a protocol Modus Operandi.
11. The conflict is obvious when society says the man has a duty to his dead father to attend the funeral but the Lord says follow me and this command supersedes the demands and protocol of society.

H. There are 2 categories of dead here.

1. The ones burying the dead believer are dead as unbelievers.
2. These dead ones are dead as they have remained in X radical being spiritually dead at physical birth and they have chosen to remain in this status quo.
3. They go to a funeral of a man who is a believer and who is now in the presence of the Lord they have no concept of or appreciation of what a funeral would be.
4. They are in locked in Negative Volition so that even if this man would go to the funeral and preach the gospel they would remain under Negative Volition.
5. It is obvious that the rest of this man's family are all unbelievers as are his friends and the grief of the unbeliever has no restraint as it has no hope.

1Thes 4;13

v13: But do not want you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning those who are asleep (the body asleep), that you may not grieve as the rest of the unbeliever who have no hope.

I. For this believer to go to the funeral would be a distracted.

1. This disciple has the spiritual gift which demands he communicate Bible Doctrine
2. He is commanded by the Lord to communicate Bible Doctrine
3. He was apparently a well known believer with a well known spiritual gift and no matter how well known or famous he must persist in the function of learning and teaching Bible Doctrine.
4. Motivation for persistence comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but he is distracted by social protocol and refuses to go further.
5. He did not board the ship but went to the funeral and such types of this are not prepared for historical disaster and this is the end of his function.

J. Principle:

1. This man has a spiritual gift and enough Bible Doctrine to function as a communicator and may be both evangelist and Pastor Teacher.
 - i. He does not have to wait till he reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to communicate Bible Doctrine.
2. Though he was a great teacher he would fail the historical crisis because he did not persist in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
3. He had a choice between Human Good and Divine Good and by so choosing he destroyed his ministry and eliminated himself for surviving any historical disaster

4. he chose human good of attending his fathers funeral rather than Divine Good of communicating Bible Doctrine.
5. Where there is conflict between Human Good and Divine Good the believer must choose Divine Good and this requires sophomore discernment.
 - i. This disciple by being entangled with the protocol of society he became a procrastinator and no pastor nor evangelist can ever procrastinate when Bible Doctrine is concerned.
6. While you may procrastinate in learning Bible Doctrine the historical crisis will not delay and wait for you to learn.
 - i. God always gives you the opportunity to learn the Bible Doctrine needed to face the crisis and if you procrastinate during the time of opportunity there will be no procrastination of the crisis and it WILL OCCUR.
 - ii. You will have had opportunity and you must only blame your own Negative Volition
 - iii. Absolutely No believer ever faces historical disaster without have had the opportunity of having resident Bible Doctrine with which to cope.
 - iv. Failure of believers in disaster means failure in the period of opportunity to learn Bible Doctrine allotted by God.

K. Principle:

1. The first distracted disciple made a decision which he did not keep being a pseudo intellectual and arrogant and thus under pressure he was emotional.
 - i. All pseudo intellectuals become emotional under pressure.
2. The second distracted disciple made the wrong decision deciding for Human Good rather than Divine Good and this failure results in the Modus Operandi of Human Good eventuating in the function of Evil.

L. Summary:

1. Because many believers make the same decision of this distracted disciple they become involved in social action promoting social welfare and even have become Marxists and for welfare state and evils such as OSHA and anti military and police and pro criminal.
2. Others follow this pattern by allowing pleasure, social life, entertainment to distract them from learning Bible Doctrine on a consistent basis.
 - i. They don't mind coming to bible study on any night where there is nothing to do.
 - ii. If there is any conflict between pleasure and Bible Doctrine the pleasure always wins.
3. As a result they are not prepared for either personal nor historical disaster.
4. Personal disaster may include dying, or death for which the believer minus Bible Doctrine is thus never prepared.
 - i. Death is one thing we individually experience and no one can die for you no matter who is there and when you die you die the way God has chosen and for yourself and only Bible Doctrine can prepare you.
5. People can sympathize and be compassionate but ONLY you do the hurting and dying.
6. For this disaster you need Bible Doctrine as for any Job 5:17-27
7. While this distracted disciple was distracted by protocol of society the 3rd distracted disciple of Luke 9:61-2 has a love problem as a distraction.
 - i. He is unstable putting love of human beings above all else.
 - ii. Because he is so busy fulfilling the command of our Lord to love people he is distracted from Bible Doctrine.
 - iii. He has a love priority and the Royal Family Honor Code demands the Priority #1 be assigned to Bible Doctrine to allow us to love Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ so that the rest of our love life might be straight and have great capacity.
 - iv. This disciple will place human sentimentality above all else and he too will flunk the crisis.

Matt 8:21

v22: But Jesus answered him commanding, "Follow me, emphatically leave in your mind and thinking, and let or allow or permit, the spiritually dead who have collapsed in their souls as unbelievers to go and bury their own physically dead whose soul and spirit have left the body to be with the Lord."

Luke 9:60

v60: But he, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, answered him commanding, "but you and only you, go and keep studying and teaching and proclaiming everywhere the kingdom or Plan of God."

Lesson #616 Series # 458 Matt 8:23- + Luke 9:60-62 Dynamics for Disaster

- I. Freedom:
 - A. It is part of principle of self determination and Logistical Grace support for all believers bringing the ability to engage in Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - B. Munda Air Strip Battle; Capt Scott Medal of Honor
 - C. Lt Shea
 - D. the medal of honor is our highest decoration given in the military for bravery
 1. The men who receive It represent the sacrifice and training it takes to be a good professional soldier
 2. There are so many people who are total jackasses undisciplined and arrogant and have no appreciation for what the word of God teaches about freedom.
 3. The real symbol of our freedom is found in military victory and this is what maintains the status quo so these jackasses can celebrate Christmas.
- II. The dynamics of disaster continued
 - A. Many people cannot handle either personal disaster or crisis catastrophes
 1. These people become casualties long before the disaster occurs by neglect or rejection of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ or Bible Doctrine after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 2. These people fall apart long before becoming psychotic and neurotic.
 - B. Review
 1. The Plan of God Equation of Hope
 - i. Imputations, Real and Judicial
 - ii. Potentials
 - iii. Hope ie Absolute Confidence
 2. Condemnation of mankind from Adam's Original Sin
 - i. Salvation for those who don't reach accountability.
 3. Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
 4. Failure in the Plan of God
 - i. In X Radical == unbeliever
 - ii. In Y Radical == Dropouts of the Christian Way of Life == Reversionism
 - a. Warning, Intensive and Dying Divine Discipline
 5. In Z Radical we receive blessing in time
 6. In X radical we are sustained by the Laws of Divine Establishment
 7. In Y radical we are sustained also by Logistical Grace
 8. In Z Radical we are sustained by these and also by maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and blessing in time.
 9. Laws of Divine Establishment are the support for the believer and unbeliever in X Radical
 10. The Believer is also supported by Laws of Divine Establishment in Y Radical along with Logistical Grace
 11. In addition in Z Radical there is support from the Laws of Divine Establishment and Logistical Grace and divine blessing in time.
 - C. The pseudo intellectual in this passage was a baby believer in the Spiritual Life while the protocol believer was an adolescent in the Plan of God
- III. The 3^d distracted disciple:

- A. These 3 believers were each real historical persons in this mob of people who actually represent categories of people who rejected coming with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ across the sea.
- B. This 3rd believer recognized the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ calling him Lord, Kurios but rejected this authority by rejecting Bible Doctrine.
1. The first pseudo Intellectual considered him equal to the Lord as he called him professor as the scribe was also a professor.
- C. **1Cor 12:3**, No one can say Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is Lord except by God the Holy Spirit
1. This is not quite pertinent to this passage as this is a Church Age doctrine where God the Holy Spirit universally indwells all believers.
 2. God the Holy Spirit was not totally given because Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was not yet glorified but his believer was very very sincere.
 3. Sincerity is not a virtue of the Christian Way of Life but is considered virtuous by emotional people.
 4. This believer is emotional but it is only bonifide as responder to the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 5. This believer has a love priority problem which will become a distraction for him.
 6. He states his dedication and those who have to constantly state their dedication are operating on something too weak to sustain dedication.
 7. Emotional Revolt of the Soul is that which is too weak to sustain any dedication to anything.
 8. ***Good intention without immediate execution cancel good motivations***
 9. this believer will procrastinate and intends to get back with it and follow the Lord.
 10. ***When there is pending disaster procrastination is tantamount to Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine.***
 11. ***We on the very brink of disaster in the United States of America find procrastination as destructive as out and out antagonism to the doctrines of God.***
- D. Principle
1. “I will follow you” is the expression of good intention and motivation and clarity of the issue in the mind of the disciple
 - i. He is the most advanced in doctrine of the 3 categories of believers who are dropouts.
 - ii. The pseudo intellectual is a baby; The protocol disciple is an adolescent and this love priority disciple is between adolescence and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 2. This third category of disciple understood the issue and what decision he should make but is distracted from good intentions by love priority problem.
 - i. ***There is NO love of any person in life that should exceed the love of Bible Doctrine.***
 3. Good intentions are no guarantee of proper execution in the Christian Way of Life.
 - i. Good intention without immediate follow up action is no intention.
 4. The expression of good intention does not mean the execution of the Christian Way of Life.
 5. Expressing good intention is no substitute for the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which is the true and ONLY momentum of the Christian Way of Life.
 - i. We cannot ever say we will get back to Bible Doctrine when it is convenient
 - ii. For those who live life of convenience they cannot make the transition into the inconvenience of human disaster.
 6. This believer recognized the importance of Bible Doctrine for as the next verse shows he has already put his hand to the plow.
 - i. Putting your hand to the plow has nothing to do with Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God

- ii. Plowing takes time and Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is an instant decision and it occurs in an instant of time.
 - iii. Putting your hand to the plow is daily consistent persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - iv. This is not a call for an evangelist to bring people to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
7. This believer made the right decision to learn Bible Doctrine on a consistent daily basis but is already distracted by love for the visible as opposed to love of the invisible.
- i. Our love life for friends or opposite sex is related to visible perceptive functions
 - ii. There are certain people you can look at and realize you will never be friends with them.
 - iii. There are certain women which any man can look at and realize that they would never ask for a date even if dying.
 - iv. The same is for women with regard to men who are JERKS and women would not be caught dead with.
 - v. *In this case as a believer we put our hand to the plow without seeing the mule or the furrow we are cutting.*
 - vi. *We only see the handle of the plow and all else is invisible including where Bible Doctrine is going to take you and what doctrine is going to open up for us in new vistas of spiritual dynamics unknown to us.*
 - vii. *Bible Doctrine will do great things and reveal God in all his glory and his plan and our relationship to it in all of our inability.*
 - viii. *This is a beautiful picture being able to see that which is invisible.*
 - ix. It is difficult to love that which you cannot see, the smarter you are as a person the easier it is to love someone who is invisible.
 - x. A very smart woman can fall in love with a man who is a good writer being stimulated in soul by the writing.
 - xi. Love in the Human Race carries visual image requirements.
8. Human love priority in this case sets aside Bible Doctrine.
- i. We are far better off in bible study developing capacity for love and not being distracted by social life and other aspects of life.
9. ***It is extremely important to engage in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine daily.***
- i. ***ONLY those who pass this test and have the dynamics for disaster are those who never let a day pass without Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.***
10. This believer did not have the guts, the persistence and perseverance and constant priority in view of Bible Doctrine first
- i. Bible Doctrine is the thinking of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and we cannot be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and love Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
11. This was a family man and had a wonderful family and all were alive and well in contrast to the 2nd dropout.
- i. Not only are they alive and well but they want daddy, husband or son to come home.
 - ii. This believer does not want to attend a funeral of one he loves but he wants to visit with those whom he loves.
12. This believers sincere intention like rededication and surrendering and giving up things for Christ and surrendering to preach and reaffirmation of faith and dedication to full time Christian service all lack any strength.
- i. Strength in the Christian Way of Life comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in

the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the inner resources of the soul.

- ii. Never does strength come from some emotional impulsive one shot dedication.
- E. Always watch for adversative conjunctions in life
1. There is always something most people must do FIRST before their priority of Bible Doctrine can take effect.
 2. Good manners are a must and a sign of thoughtfulness.
 - i. Often People who have good manners are not necessarily thoughtful but have learned the protocol of society.
 - ii. This man has the veneer of protocol.
 3. It is great to have good manners and protocol in society is essential and thoughtfulness of others is extremely important whether a party or in the Local Church and to be sensitive to the needs of others and avoid hurting them is necessary.
 4. This man assumes that this is a formality to request permission to say farewell to loved ones will be granted since the Lord was such a thoughtful loving person.
 5. That which is being requested is stated here in a manner so we can understand that everything in all 3 categories being requested can either destroy or make you better because they indicate and reveal the motivation of the soul.
 - i. These request reveals how you are thinking and how you are motivated and also shows wrong priorities and wrong motivation and thus loss of momentum and thus failure in normal times and surely in times of disaster.
 6. This person is asking permission to see his loved ones and say farewell knowing he will eventually have to tear away from them to follow the Lord
 - i. The connotation is that his mind is organized through self discipline respect for authority and recognition of greater more important things in life.
 - ii. This means that there comes a time in the life of every person that responsibility, duty, honor, must take precedence over one's Personal Love for another.
 - iii. Always in life there will be a test to see if your sense of duty and responsibility and understanding of historical circumstances more important than those dearest to you whom you love the most.
 - iv. This also demands reciprocity because in noble and honorable and virtuous love the one being left always understands and her love is so great that she is willing to permit sacrifice and this is wonderful and honorable.
 - a. See the famous "Toast to Army Wives" by George Patton.
 - b. This is not all army wives who mostly are very selfish and superficial and very stupid.
 - c. They are not willing to let their husbands out of sight for even a second because their time with their husband in their arrogance is more important than anything else in life.
 - d. This is how people think in times of decadence.
 - e. There has to be on the part of the woman not only a response to the man she loves but the recognition that he must do his duty in life whether a simple job which requires long or unusual hours.
 - f. These wives must be very understanding and noble and very much in love to make a very wonderful home for him.
 - g. These wives must not be bitchy and we must not call them bitches because this maligns female dogs unnecessarily.
 7. Where true love exists so that in the parting those who must sacrifice and see their loved one go will be understanding rather than encouraging rather than whining and complaining and bitching.
 - i. The one who leaves leaves with encouragement of knowing he is loved and will be missed and they will be waiting when he returns.
 8. This man wants to take a week or so to say good bye and delay the ship for that time.

9. This man is very selfish for his love for his family and there is nothing which is wrong with loving your family.
 - i. If you have selfish love which includes jealousy and pettiness and other reactions you will destroy your capacity for love for true love must have a sense of sacrifice.
 - ii. True love must be sensitive to the object of love.
10. This man has a very selfish love and his family apparently is extremely selfish and very very possessive.
 - i. **The love which is possessive is no love at all.**
 - ii. This is like a horse with a tough mouth who is not sensitive to the light reign at all.
 - iii. When you become possessive and jealous inevitably you destroy the wonderful love you had
 - iv. Love does not stand still in life and is moving forward or backward.
 - v. We love those close to us either more or less than we did before.
 - vi. Being possessive strangles love and smothers love and if you smother someone you destroy them.
 - vii. Possessive lovers are like uncontrollable horses and this is a tragedy.
11. This man is in love and his love has taken Priority #1 in his life.
 - i. His love for wife, children, parents, etc.

F. Principles:

1. There are both similarities and differences between the 2nd and 3rd distracted disciples
 - i. He is not distracted by protocols of society
 - ii. He is distracted because of his intense love for his wife, children and family.
 - iii. There is nothing wrong with this as it is virtuous and honorable.
 - iv. He must however not allow his human love to deter the plan of the Lord for his life at this time.
 - v. It is not that he will not see his family again but it is that the lord has given him a command which would separate him from his family.
2. It is Metabolized Bible Doctrine which has provided capacity for life for this person for his family and parents and t his is virtuous and wonderful in life.
3. This disciple demonstrates that virtuous and wonderful things in life can sometimes as in a case for a course for disaster be a distraction from the most important things in life that being Bible Doctrine resulting in love for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
4. This is a normal request made to the Lord for normal times but this is made at an abnormal time where there is an approach of disaster.
 - i. The special disaster course which the Lord has designed for those with Positive Volition and in which they can matriculate by embarking immediately on the ship.
5. This believer will fail in the crisis because he cannot distinguish between normal and abnormal circumstances of history and because his priorities are wrong.
 - i. WE are now saturated with abnormal circumstances of history in the United States of America.
 - ii. He learned enough Bible Doctrine to almost reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and had capacity for love but did not know how to handle this capacity.
 - iii. Something was lost in gaining capacity and that was Priority #1 for Bible Doctrine.
6. The emphasis is placed here on following the Lord into the unknown where natural and historical disaster will occur forming a course in disaster dynamics.
7. This distracted disciple has placed cat II and III love above category I love for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
8. His family whom he loves dearly has become a distraction for him not because they seek

- to distract him from Bible Doctrine but because from his own free will and own scale of values he has distracted himself.
- i. This is why we have this 3rd category where the man distracts himself.
 - ii. He distracts himself because of his great love and his love came from Bible Doctrine but he forgot the source.
 - iii. When you forget the source you become your own worst enemy.
9. Just as the prior disciple was a believer who had been exercising his spiritual gift in communication of Bible Doctrine so this disciple had almost made it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but will fail before reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God because of wrong priorities and lacks appreciation of the source of all things.
- i. When you begin to develop capacity for anything including love it is never consolidated until in your soul you are grateful.
 - ii. This is thinking gratitude in terms of origin or source.
 - iii. This is not failing to give a thank you note nor being effusive when someone give something to you.
 - iv. When people give so that they can have a demonstration of gratitude they are bribing others for gratitude they are out of line.
 - v. This is gratitude in your soul.
 - vi. It is never the gift nor its cost or quality but it is that someone loves you enough to give to you.
10. This person is like someone who gives people presents to bribe them for attention or affection or is stimulated by being told how wonderful he is.
- i. This person is an idiot.
 - ii. Those who truly love never desire a thanks but do it because they love and that is all.
11. **We must never lose track of the origin of all blessing which is God himself.**
- i. When people tell you how good you are and how talented remember the origin is God and his blessing.
 - ii. ***We must remember the origin and give thanks to the origin.***
 - iii. We are what we are because of the origin
 - iv. God gave and keeps on giving as he did on Christmas where he gave his unspeakable gift of the savior in the 1st advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
12. ***We lose something in love when we forget the origin and by remembering the origin we always have humility.***
- i. ***When we forget the origin we become arrogant and think we are self made***
 - ii. ***We forget who permitted you to continue to live and work hard and be successful.***
 - iii. ***This was a successful believer and almost to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but will fail.***
 - iv. ***When people succeed in life and forget the origin of that success they fail even though they still have the accourdaments of promotion and success.***
 - v. ***If we are smart we could instantly become stupid with an IQ of -0.***
 - vi. ***This would knock our arrogance right out of us and if we have something or someone we love or enjoy remember the origin.***
 - vii. ***WE have nothing which the Lord cannot take away from us in a second.***
 - viii. ***At Christmas we will have a great sense of humor if we remember we are nothing all of us and whatever we are or have or where we go or are promoted or in what ever way we succeed it is because of who and what the Lord is and not us.***
 - ix. ***We have talent and ability because God gave us talent and if you get too cocky about it he will take it away and then you will see exactly what this means.***

- x. *If you do not appreciate the Lord as the source of everything in normal times you will fail in abnormal times*
 - xi. *You will blame the Lord in disaster where you merely ignore the Lord in normal times.*
13. **Many people fail the disaster test for at least 3 reasons**
- i. **Wrong priorities and nothing can come before Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for this is how the Lord makes love to us.**
 - a. *We forget the source when we forget Bible Doctrine.*
 - b. *We must remember the source by consistency in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.*
 - ii. **By being confused by the subject of love.**
 - a. *Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is the key to capacity for both Impersonal Love and Personal Love.*
 - iii. **Failure to properly interpret contemporary history results in not being prepared for disaster when it comes.**
 - a. *The only way to prepare for disaster is to go back to the source and remember the source through consistent persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.*
 - b. *We must learn Bible Doctrine daily which God has given under Logistical Grace support.*

Luke 9:61

v61: Now another student disciple of a different category also said, "Lord, I will eventually follow you, but I urgently request first, give me permission say a loving farewell to those in my family, and I will eventually tear myself away from them."

Lesson #618 Series # 458 Matt 8:23- Dynamics for Disaster

- I. Dynamics for Disaster Continued:
- A. We must remember as we approach our national disaster
 - 1. Prosperity comes from free enterprise and free enterprise is protected by freedom which is provided by military victory
 - 2. All freedom in any nation comes from military victory
 - B. Those qualified and who matriculated in the course of divine dynamics for disaster.
 - 1. *Many believers fail in normal times but also many take the course in normal times for disaster and are thus prepared for disaster.*
 - i. Too Many believers are dropouts and will know nothing of the doctrine of the course of disaster preparation and will fail in disaster.
 - 2. *In spite of the fact that many believers are drop outs and never matriculate in the course for disaster there are those who advance and are always ready for the crisis.*
 - 3. *The crisis personality is the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or under Positive Volition who is on t he verge of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God who continue with Positive Volition to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.*
 - 4. *The believer who has Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and has momentum to move into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is always oriented to reality in normal and abnormal times.*
 - 5. *His happiness does not depend on the circumstances of his life whether pleasant or unpleasant and he does not sulk nor express miserable attitudes but is oriented to reality.*
 - 6. *We must always be oriented to reality no matter what the reality is and always having the same inner resources and happiness from them.*
 - 7. Orientation to reality uses the maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to maintain inner happiness.
 - 8. This crisis personality is the mature or maturing believer who is always flexible with

- regard to NON essentials and totally inflexible with regard to essentials.
9. This flexibility is often the difference between surviving and not surviving in a disaster situation.
 10. All the Bible Doctrine we have in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the result of concentration where by we listen and learn and metabolize the doctrine and then are able using this same system of concentration to apply Bible Doctrine to the situation of disaster.
 11. You cannot survive any historical disaster unless you have the ability to think in disaster and to think and apply the right principles and applications in disasters.
 12. The system by which you learn is the same system by which you apply what you have learned in time of disaster.
 13. With flexibility with regard to non essentials you have the ability to recognize instantly a disaster situation.
 14. All high priorities are assigned to essentials which for the believer is the focus on Bible Doctrine.
 15. All believers must put Bible Doctrine first and remember the source and remain Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
 16. Thus the crisis personality combines inflexibility with regard to non essentials with inflexibility with regard to essentials and concentration and ability to think.
 17. This crisis personality can cope with any disaster in life whether personal or historical and does not follow any set pattern nor mold of some overt system which he must follow and cannot depart from.
 - i. We must be ready to move from one spot where our supplies are or move to a spot where we have supplies in crisis because of immediate danger.
 18. It is always the crisis personality who can do the right thing because of flexibility and concentration and his ability to think and the disaster does not freeze this thinking but stimulates it.
 19. He concentrates in disaster on what is important the essentials the inner residence of Bible Doctrine.
 20. This historical crisis personality gives the strong mature believer the opportunity to apply Bible Doctrine to reality and thus demonstrate the power of Bible Doctrine in life.
 21. The imputation of blessing to the mature believer always includes Undeserved Suffering which is in effect a course of preparation for historical disaster.
- C. In spite of the 3 categories of believers being eliminated from the course in disaster dynamics the course goes on.
1. Each person in the mob made a decision which led to action and now about 500 find themselves in the course for disaster dynamics on the ship out of probably 30,000 in the mob.
 2. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ boarded the ship first and these under Positive Volition followed him.
- D. Principle:
1. These disciples or students with their Positive Volition represent believers who are persistent and consistent and keep plugging and are therefore stable in their Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and nothing distracts them
 - i. They are not distracted by pseudo intellectuality nor protocol nor love priorities as are these we have studied
 - ii. These are distracted by legitimate things some honorable things NOT sinful things.
 - iii. Sin is not the issue in this passage and the obvious positive issue is Bible Doctrine and the obvious negative issues is that there are a lot of noble, pleasant, honorable, wonderful good things in life which can be just as distracting as any system of good and evil in life.

- iv. Each distraction categories we have looked at involved something which was in effect virtuous and good rather than sinful and evil.
2. They are therefore unremitting in their perseverance where Bible Doctrine is concerned.
 - i. Nothing will ever replace bible doctrine
 - ii. They never lose the continuity of the teaching of the Lord and as today we must not lose the continuity of the teaching of Bible Doctrine from our right Pastor Teacher.
 - iii. Continuity is everything in teaching of Bible Doctrine thus the Pastor Teacher must teach continuously in order to complete a consistent study.
 - iv. The only way to be hurt by continuity are those who miss class one or two nights of teaching and will be lost on the subject.
 - v. Continuity means consistency and consistency means stability.
3. Those who board the ship as those today who are consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine are motivated to exploit the opportunity to learn Bible Doctrine
 - i. They are grateful to the Lord for this opportunity afforded by Logistical Grace support.
 - ii. They are persistent and consistent and will go anywhere to learn Bible Doctrine.
4. They are mentally indefatigable and pertinacious no matter what the subject happens to be.
 - i. They have unlimited perspicacity with unlimited persistence.
5. These disciples follow our Lord into the ship not knowing where they are going and where they are going does not make any difference.
 - i. They don't look into or at their future not thinking about it in terms of advancement but look at their immediate situation one day at a time to stay up with the Lord so that were he guide them they go
 - ii. In this sense they demonstrate persistence in Positive Volition
 - iii. For us today it is waking in the morning and thanking the Lord for another day to live and then giving back to him a little time to engage in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine so that we too can make it to the level of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and be able to in our lifetime glorify God in effect consistently by Positive Volition thanking him for the grace provisions for our whole life which has enabled us to remain consistent in this perception of doctrine learning about him. (I am rambling but this is amazing to me to think some of us have actually done something right in life and not screwed up everything since we were born since we see so much of that today)
6. Even systems of legitimate human security such as food and shelter have been set aside in the priority battle of life.
 - i. There is always something which may be more important than anything else in life to us and this is the issue in the priority battle.
 - ii. This is not Bible Doctrine which should be Priority #1
 - iii. This is in our lives we all as thinking individuals more or less inevitably we will establish something in life which is more important in life than anything else.
 - iv. It may be a person or situation or success or maybe Bible Doctrine on animate or inanimate but something is always first and the hub around which life for us revolves.
 - v. It is that thing which either makes or breaks us as a believer
 - vi. If that something is Bible Doctrine then it is inevitable that we would have like these Positive Volition disciples would have left the crowd and embarked on the consistent study of Bible Doctrine (the ship with the Lord here).
 - vii. If there is something in life more important than Bible Doctrine in life it is also inevitable that the virtuous good wonderful pure honorable can be just as

- distracting as anything sinful or evil.
- viii. It takes a long time for us to understand this principle having been exposed to preaching sin by baptists and Catholics etc.
 - ix. This enumeration of sins which keep people out of church but obviously here we see we are not dealing with sin here but these are distractions which destroy NICE PEOPLE.
 - x. Most fundamentalists somewhere along their lives become nice people and apart from Christians hell will be filled with nice people:
 - a. Agents of OSHA, EPA, Environmentalists, ETC.
 - b. There are so many NICE people in the United States of America that the country is on the very brink of historical disaster.
 - c. Bad people are generally obvious and hypocritical and often hide their evil to gain an objective
 - d. It may be to attract some idiotic female or make a sale or cheat someone out of something or steal or murder.
 - xi. It is the virtuous and honorable and good which forms the most subtle field of distractions
 - xii. Since most believers are those with some Bible Doctrine if not a lot of Bible Doctrine it is obvious we don't here deal with sin as the issue.
 - xiii. Even food, shelter, human security have been set aside in this priority battle of life and this is the battle which is so very destructive and devastating spiritually.
7. The ship itself represents Bible Doctrine inculcated because perception is not enough.
- i. Perception indicates that there is some concentration and perspicacity
 - ii. Inculcation means authority and Positive Volition transferring it from the Left Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as epignosis.
8. On the ship with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is the only safe place to be in life.
- i. For us since Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is not on the earth maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the only safety in life.
 - ii. It creates the great Wall of Fire which surrounds us and protects us from both unseen and visible dangers in life.
 - iii. This is the only place to face the storms of lie whether personal or historical.
 - iv. Our Lord entered the ship before the disciples followed (ff just as he tested the protocol spiritual life on earth before he gave it to us).
9. 3 Categories of disciples who failed said "I will follow you" in dedication and sincerity and under emotion.
- i. Sincerity is not a virtue
 - ii. Emotion out of control is not a virtue.
 - iii. I will follow you IF you go.
 - iv. I will follow you but first permit me to say good bye to my loved ones.
 - v. I will follow you but let me go bury my father.
 - vi. The ones who spoke their good intentions did not carry out their good intentions.
 - vii. This proves that giving public dedications is totally 100% useless and meaningless, affirmation and reaffirmation of faith, dedication to full time service and surrendering to preach.
 - viii. These are meaningless and it is only daily consistent persistent decisions to take in Bible Doctrine which really counts in our life.
 - ix. These people which followed the Lord did what the dropouts said they would do but never did, being all talk and no action.
 - x. Those with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and are pluggers and who persevere in the intake of Bible Doctrine are the

true doers.

- xi. When we learn enough doctrine we will fulfill the functions of production and we need not declare that we would do this as our dedications.
- xii. The important thing is to do these things from our own free will motivated from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul not motivated by another person inspiring you.
- xiii. If you have to be inspired you are a weak sister and using a crutch and if someone has to be pep talk it is no good.
- xiv. ***In all that we do our training must be volitional and we must function professionally.***
- xv. ***We must learn our job or function and then just do it professionally without emotion.***
- xvi. ***People must be motivated from the soul to succeed in disaster when the pressure is on.***

E. Principle:

1. Before the believer can face storms of life he must enter the ship
 - i. Before you can matriculate in the course for disaster dynamics you must have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - ii. You must be consistent and persistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
2. No storm or testing becomes a blessing until the believer enters the ship or follows the Lord in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
3. The ship is analogous to teaching of Bible Doctrine
 - i. The ship is isolated and all bible teaching is accomplished by isolation from the mob and normal functions of life.
 - a. This is why we have a church and early churches met in homes and catacombs and caves away from the mob.
 - ii. Those learning Bible Doctrine must be separated to learn.
 - iii. The ship is on the water and thus isolated from the normal functions of life.
4. When the believer enters the classroom of the Local Church he is thus isolated from the Modus Operandi of life.
5. Thus the classroom eliminates distractions so that concentration on Bible Doctrine will result in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and that same concentration can reverse itself for application of Bible Doctrine.
6. Once a believer gains momentum from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine he can face any storm or disaster of life.
7. No storm nor disaster becomes a test until the believer from his own free will takes in Bible Doctrine ie boards the ship.
 - i. Adversity is never a test until there is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - ii. Adversity is never a blessing without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - iii. You must have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in order to reverse concentration and apply it to disaster and catastrophe and difficulties of life.
 - iv. This is an advance on the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories).

II. The curriculum on Disaster dynamics Matt 8:24-27

A. This force 12 storm was the course of disaster dynamics

1. This was a deliberately produced terrible storm
2. The sea of Galilee or sea of Tiberius was a place for sudden incredible storms.
3. The storm thus was the crisis and was actually the course.
4. Those under Positive Volition and came with the Lord aboard the ship were those with

enough Bible Doctrine to persist in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine not the test come to see if the concentration in learning Bible Doctrine can be reversed to use the Bible Doctrine under great disaster conditions.

5. The preparation for the course in persistence in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
6. The storm is designated and designed by God to teach the futility of human resources of any kind in disaster.
7. Whether personal or if you are in a situation called by us security, no energy of the flesh function, no talent, ability nor power nor authority.
8. People with authority often feel secure and authority is no place for safety in disaster.
9. Money or wealth or success or ability or popularity or whatever is regarded as security for being safe.
10. In time of disaster no nation nor island nor place of isolation in the world is safe or secure.
11. The obvious part of this curriculum is that the only thing which is safe is the inner resources of Bible Doctrine.
12. Only the believers under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine face the storm since those with Negative Volition have already been eliminated for various reasons and excuses all of which are legitimate they refused to embark on the ship.
13. In the storm believers with Positive Volition learn who and what Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is and the importance of Bible Doctrine and thus these storms of life are designed to teach a higher form of security than anything we have ever known before.
14. This security is related to the manifest person on the godhead the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
15. The sea is for us the circumstances of life variable and unpredictable one moment being calm and beautiful representing the pleasant times of life and the next it is wild and stormy and awesome in its fury representing the disasters and crises of life.
16. The ship represents maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, enough Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to take the course not necessarily a mature believer but a believer who has long ago passed the point of ignorance of Bible Doctrine.
17. With maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer is ABOVE the circumstances of life and not a slave to them.
18. Storms of life do not frighten him and does not take away Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
19. Circumstances are never the basis for blessing nor happiness in life only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
20. This is the major point which is taught in this crisis of the storm.

B. Principle:

1. The adverse circumstances of life are like a stormy sea providing uncertainty and lack of human control.
 - i. Disaster is a circumstance which is beyond our ability to control it
 - ii. A storm at sea for passengers is exactly than.
2. The ship is the only place of safety in the storm just as Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the only security for storms of life.
3. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the basis for capacity for happiness and blessing in life and this same Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the basis for confidence in adversity.
4. Many believers never get into the ship being distracted from Bible Doctrine by legitimate things but those who face the storm not as Divine Discipline but blessing face it with Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
 - i. None of these disciples ran to the bridge screaming “God is punishing me” and

- then had a nervous breakdown because God was not punishing them.
- ii. Some believers not even sophomores in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul continue to associate every bit of adversity in life as some punishment for our past or current sins and this is OK but we must realize at some point the biggest sin is probably for us GUILT.
5. The only place for safety and security in the storm is the ship of Bible Doctrine the word of God in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from many sessions of bible teaching.
 6. No matter how intense the storm or great the crisis or disaster the ship is stabilized and safe for the ship is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which cannot be destroyed no matter what is happening to our life and our situation in life we are safer with Metabolized Bible Doctrine than in any pseudo secure situation.
 7. Suffering for blessing is one of the categories of imputed blessing from the Justice of God and it is designed for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God though there is always at least one test prior to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 8. This means that suffering is intimately linked to blessing in the divine imputation from the Justice of God to the Righteousness of God in us.
 - i. The storms of life like this storm is a real storm and they feel like we do the pressure of adversity before the blessing comes.
 9. You cannot have blessing from suffering unless the disaster is REAL and it must be a REAL catastrophe to gain blessing from God.
 - i. This storm for these disciples is getting worse and worse.

Matt 8:23

v23: Nevertheless, when he boarded the ship, the Positive Volition student believer disciples followed him.